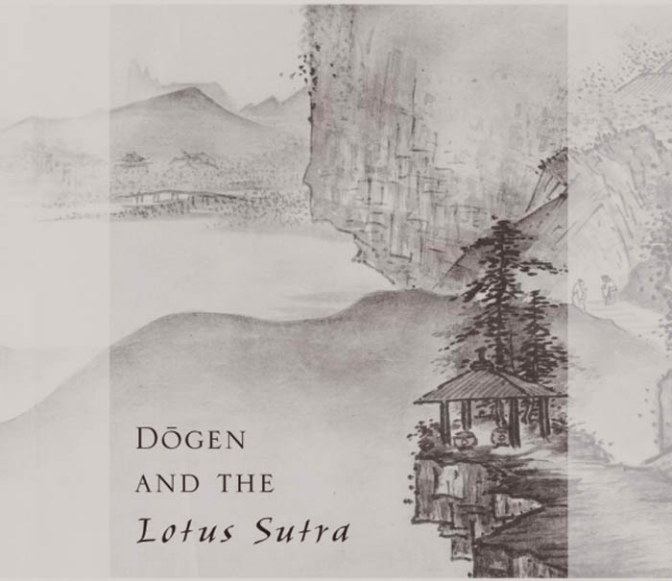
Visions of Awakening Space and Time



Dōgen and the *Lotus Sutra*

Taigen Dan Leighton

Visions of Awakening Space and Time

This page intentionally left blank

Visions of Awakening Space and Time

Dōgen and the Lotus Sutra

TAIGEN DAN LEIGHTON

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS
2007

OXFORD
UNIVERSITY PRESS

Oxford University Press, Inc., publishes works that further
Oxford University's objective of excellence
in research, scholarship, and education.

Oxford New York
Auckland Cape Town Dar es Salaam Hong Kong Karachi
Kuala Lumpur Madrid Melbourne Mexico City Nairobi
New Delhi Shanghai Taipei Toronto

With offices in
Argentina Austria Brazil Chile Czech Republic France Greece
Guatemala Hungary Italy Japan Poland Portugal Singapore
South Korea Switzerland Thailand Turkey Ukraine Vietnam

Published by Oxford University Press, Inc.
198 Madison Avenue, New York, New York 10016

www.oup.com

Oxford is a registered trademark of Oxford University Press

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data
Leighton, Taigen Daniel.
Visions of awakening space and time : Dōgen and the Lotus sutra /
Taigen Dan Leighton.
p. cm.
Includes bibliographical references and index.
ISBN 978-0-19-532093-0
1. Dōgen, 1200–1253. 2. Tripiṭaka. Sūtrapiṭaka. Saddharmapuṇḍarīkasūtra—
Criticism, interpretation, etc. I. Title.
BQ9449.D657L45 2007
294.3'85—dc22 2006051540

9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Printed in the United States of America
on acid-free paper

Preface

In the striking story from the *Lotus Sutra* that is one starting point for this work, an incalculable number of venerable, dedicated bodhisattvas, or enlightening beings, emerge suddenly from an open space under the earth to pledge to the Buddha Śākyamuni their assistance in keeping alive his teaching, even far into the future. This tale of chthonic bodhisattvas emerging from under the ground resonates with a number of mythic and historical narratives. Comparing such images may provide some illuminating metaphoric contexts for this story, which begins chapter 15 of the sutra.[1]

Although a survey of analogous mythological references is beyond the scope of this work, a particularly instructive comparison to the story of emerging bodhisattvas is a modern account by spiritual writer Annie Dillard of an experience she had in 1982. Her story reaches back in time to around 206 BCE, historically within a century before the *Lotus Sutra* began to be committed to writing, and to events in China some six centuries before Kumārajīva translated the standard version of the *Lotus Sutra* used there.[2]

Dillard visited the tomb of the Qin emperor near Xi'an (formerly Chang'an) as the thousands of clay soldiers buried with the emperor who had first unified China were being unearthed after their recent discovery in 1974. As her eyewitness response is a key part of the comparison, I quote Dillard at some length:

> Chinese archaeologists were in the years-long process of excavating a buried army of life-sized soldiers. The first Chinese emperor, Emperor Qin, had sculptors make thousands of individual statues. Instead of burying his army of living men to accompany him in the afterlife—a custom of the time—he interred their full-bodied portraits.
>
> At my feet, and stretching off into the middle distance . . . I saw what looked like human bodies coming out of the earth. . . . From the trench walls emerged an elbow here, a leg and foot there, a head and neck. Everything was the same color, the terra-cotta earth and the people: the color of plant pots.
>
> Everywhere the bodies, the clay people, came crawling from the deep ground. A man's head and shoulders stuck out of a trench wall. He wore a helmet and armor. From the breast down, he was in the wall. The earth bound his abdomen. . . . I looked down into his face. His astonishment was formal.
>
> The earth was yielding these bodies, these clay people: it erupted them forth, it pressed them out. The same tan soil that embedded these people also made them; it grew and bore them. The clay people were earth itself, only shaped.[3]

The first obvious difference is that this uncovering of entombed soldiers is a historical event, unlike the literary, scriptural emergence from the earth of spiritual benefactors in the *Lotus Sutra*. However, as Donald Lopez traces the term "bodhisattva," the Sanskrit word *bodhi* is the state of being awake, and the Sanskrit term *sattva* has etymological roots that include "sentient being," "mind" or "intention," but also "the sense of strength or courage, making the compound *bodhisattva* mean 'one whose strength is directed toward enlightenment.'" This meaning was later emphasized in the Tibetan translation for bodhisattva, which means literally "enlightenment-mind-hero," or "one who is heroic in his or her intention to achieve enlightenment."[4] This meaning may have been reinforced by the historical Śākyamuni Buddha having previously been a prince well-trained in martial arts. Thus the bodhisattva has sometimes been associated with warrior strength and courage and with the heroic aspect of dedication to awakening.

As a further parallel, East Asian Mahāyāna imagery frequently discusses the relationship of teachers and students, or buddhas and bodhisattvas, using metaphors of lords and vassals, based on the relationship of Chinese emperors to their soldiers and government ministers. So it seems that the Chinese soldiers buried under the earth for all those centuries are not an inappropriate analogue for the underground bodhisattva retainers of Buddha.

Of course, one prime facet of the *Lotus Sutra* underground bodhisattvas is their long-lived practice and enduring availability, whereas the Xi'an soldiers are mere "clay people." However, Dillard's reaction to observing how "the earth was yielding these bodies, these clay people: it erupted them forth, it pressed them out," is a revealing comparison for the emerging from earth of the bodhisattvas. First, we simply note the earthiness of the Qin soldiers, clay people colored terra-cotta, of "the earth itself, only shaped." The *Lotus Sutra* bodhisattvas are alive, not molded from terra-cotta. And yet they have been under the earth, in the open space under the ground, for longer, much longer, than the two-millennia-old Qin dynasty soldiers, and these bodhisattvas also profoundly represent the earth element.

Another noteworthy aspect of Dillard's account is her astonishment at the partial exposure of the soldiers, like Michelangelo's striking figures still half-embedded in stone. It is as if Dillard were seeing the bodhisattvas' rapid emergence in extreme slow motion. And her astonishment at the sight is reminiscent of the puzzled confusion of the Buddha's regular disciples in the sutra story.

Yet Dillard transposes this shock and bewilderment to the soldiers themselves: "A man's head and shoulders stuck out of a trench wall. The earth bound his abdomen. . . . I looked down into his face. His astonishment was formal." Dillard's account allows us to wonder at the contrasting response of the *Lotus Sutra* underground bodhisattvas, as they suddenly emerged after vast ages beneath the earth. Their eruption is itself so startling that we might neglect the perhaps equally amazing readiness that they exhibit in promptly making offerings to the Buddha and proclaiming their availability to sustain the Dharma, with no befuddlement or hesitation themselves after their astonishing, sudden emergence. From their extraordinary performance of enduring service and dedication, one might derive much concerning the spiritually nourishing nature of earth and of time in the Mahāyāna, and we will see that certainly Dōgen does so.

The underground bodhisattvas express the immanence of the liberative potential, or buddha nature, in the ground of the earth, as well as in the inner, psychological ground of being, ever ready to spring forth and benefit beings when called. The image represents the fertility of the earth itself and the wondrous, healing, natural power of creation, or the phenomenal world.

This work explores this section of the *Lotus Sutra* and how it was used by the thirteenth-century Japanese Zen master Eihei Dōgen to express his dynamic worldview. The first chapter presents the story of *Lotus Sutra* chapters 15 and 16, beginning with the underground bodhisattvas emerging to maintain the

sutra's teaching long into the future, leading to the revelation of the Buddha's inconceivably long life span. This story is pivotal to the sutra's meaning and to its literary structure, as early Chinese commentators Daosheng and Zhiyi viewed the story as dividing the earlier cause or practice section from the effect, or fundamental teaching, later section of the sutra. The worldview of Dōgen in which space itself becomes awakened and is mutually, interactively supportive with practitioners is also introduced.

The second chapter presents a range of hermeneutical and methodological considerations related to Dōgen and the *Lotus Sutra*, discussing approaches particularly relevant to Dōgen: skillful means; Tathāgata garbha, or buddha womb teaching; and practice as enactment of realization. This is followed by pertinent considerations from Paul Ricoeur's Western hermeneutical perspectives on use of metaphor and wordplay as a context for appreciating Dōgen's creative use of language, and Ricoeur's writings about proclamation that are illuminating of Dōgen's discourse style, which to a great extent explicitly draws from the *Lotus Sutra*. Also discussed is the new interest in the strong role of imagery and imagination in Buddhism, important for both Mahāyāna sutras and for Dōgen.

Chapter 3 traces the responses and commentaries to the *Lotus Sutra*, especially to its chapters 15 and 16, from a series of prominent East Asian Buddhist teachers. Featured in these discussions are early Chinese teachers Daosheng, Zhiyi, and Zhanran; Dōgen's rough contemporaries in Japan, Saigyō, Myōe, and Nichiren; and the commentaries of later Japanese Zen figures Hakuin, Ryōkan, and the modern master Shunryū Suzuki. Among major issues that these contrasting responses address are the nature of the earth and the practice relationship to this world; the manner in which this *Lotus Sutra* story applies to later, ongoing practice; and the nature of the Buddha himself in the light of this story.

Chapter 4, in many ways the heart of this book, is a close reading of a range of references throughout Dōgen's writings to *Lotus Sutra* chapters 15 and 16, organized in terms of earth, space, and time, and then by how Dōgen uses these citations as practice encouragements for his students. These commentaries reveal Dōgen's strong lifetime allegiance to the *Lotus Sutra* text, and also his approach to awakening as a function of the nature of reality, intimately connected with the dynamic support of the earth, space itself, and a multidimensional view of the movements of time.

Chapter 5 discusses a range of Mahāyāna imagery concerning earth, space, and their confluence and related Buddhist backgrounds on temporality, and how these may have served as a wider context for Dōgen's worldview beyond the *Lotus Sutra* as his major Mahāyāna source. David McMahan's discussions

of the spatialization of time help further reveal how Dōgen's view of the spiritual potential of space and earth influenced his more celebrated teachings of being-time and his exhortations to fully inhabit time.

Finally, the afterword speculates about some of the potential implications of Dōgen's Mahāyāna worldview to contemporary twenty-first-century concerns. These include parallels to modern cutting-edge physics and string theory, this worldview's relationship to a spiritual perspective on ecology and our struggle to sustain our environment, and then to social engagement and a modern, socially active Buddhist ethic.

This page intentionally left blank

Acknowledgments

I would like to express my gratitude for gracious assistance and suggestions from Richard Payne, dean of the Institute of Buddhist Studies of the Graduate Theological Union, Judith Berling of the Graduate Theological Union, and Thomas Kasulis of Ohio State University, my committee for the doctoral dissertation on which this book is based. I thank especially Richard Payne for his very valuable suggestions and for long-term patience and support.

Thanks also to Seijun Ishii of Komazawa University in Japan, who was a valuable consultant and made helpful suggestions and corrections. Steven Heine, one of the preeminent American scholars of Dōgen, was similarly of valued assistance as a consultant. I thank Yi Wu of the California Institute of Integral Studies in San Francisco, who helped guide some of the material that found its way into this work. I am also ever grateful to Yi Wu for his assistance in my earlier translation of writings by Hongzhi Zhengjue, which experience was helpful background to my ongoing study of Dōgen and Sōtō Zen. Some of the material on hermeneutics in this work was first developed in consultation with Naomi Seidman of the Graduate Theological Union; I appreciate her helpful comments and encouragement. I am grateful to the Graduate Theological Union for presenting me with a Presidential Scholarship, helpful support while engaging in portions of this work.

Some material in this work has appeared previously in other forms in my articles "Dōgen's Appropriation of *Lotus Sutra* Ground

and Space," in *Japanese Journal of Religious Studies*, 2005; "Dōgen's Cosmology of Space and the Practice of Self-Fulfillment," in *Pacific World*, 2004; and "The *Lotus Sutra* as a Source for Dōgen's Discourse Style," in *Discourse and Ideology in Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, edited by Richard Payne and Taigen Dan Leighton (London: Routledge, 2005).

The *Japanese Journal of Religious Studies* essay, material from which is further developed in portions of the first four chapters of this work, began as a paper for the 2002 Risshō Kōseikai conference on "Zen and the Lotus Sutra." Thanks to Gene Reeves, convener of this conference, for his helpful comments and encouragement. Many thanks also for useful comments and suggestions on that occasion from John McRae, Paul Swanson, Ruben Habito, and William LaFleur.

My essay "The *Lotus Sutra* as a Source for Dōgen's Discourse Style," which appears in the Routledge book coedited by Richard Payne and myself, is the source for the material in the last portion of chapter 2. This essay initially was prepared for the Institute of Buddhist Studies conference on "Discourse and Ideology in Medieval Japanese Buddhism," held in September 2001. On that occasion I received especially beneficial extensive comments from Jan Nattier and other helpful comments from Carl Bielefeldt and Bernard Faure.

I am grateful to Cynthia Read, Julia TerMaat, and Oxford University Press for their kindness in bringing this work to publication. Thanks also to Rev. Ryūei Michael McCormick of the Nichiren Shū, who was helpful in various ways with the material on Nichiren, and also generally with his extensive knowledge of the *Lotus Sutra*.

I have been thinking and teaching about the material in this book, including the central story in the *Lotus Sutra* and its relationship to Dōgen's teaching, for more than fifteen years, so I have been helped in the relevant research by many people. My long-time study of Dōgen has benefited immeasurably from collaborative translation work I have done with Shohaku Okumura (for three books we cotranslated) and with Kazuaki Tanahashi (included in the three books of Dōgen translations he has edited). I am grateful for their friendship, as well as their invaluable help in understanding Dōgen and his language. I have also had the pleasure and benefit over the years of extensive discussion and friendship with Dōgen and Zen scholars Steven Heine, Norman Waddell, Griffith Foulk, Thomas Cleary, Will Bodiford, Carl Bielefeldt, and Tom Wright. They have all informed my understanding of Dōgen.

I would like to thank all of my spiritual teachers, who have helped me experience Dōgen's teachings from within the practice tradition. I am unspeakably grateful to both Rev. Kandō Nakajima, who introduced me to Dōgen

together with zazen more than thirty years ago, and to my ordination and Dharma transmission teacher, Tenshin Reb Anderson. I am also indebted for teachings on Dōgen to Zen teachers Tanaka Shinkai, Ikkō Narasaki, Blanche Hartman, Richard Baker, Dan Welch, Dainin Katagiri, and Phillip Whalen. Finally, I am deeply grateful to Kimberly Johnson for her warm support, encouragement, and useful comments during the writing of this work.

This page intentionally left blank

Contents

1. The Pivotal Lotus Story and Dōgen's Worldview, 3

2. Hermeneutics and Discourse Styles in Studies of the *Lotus Sutra* and Dōgen, 13

3. Selected East Asian Interpretations of the Story, 41

4. Dōgen's Interpretations of This *Lotus Sutra* Story, 67

5. Dōgen's View of Earth, Space, and Time Seen in Mahāyāna Context, 95

Afterword:
Implications of Dōgen's Mahāyāna Worldview, 117

Notes, 129

Bibliography, 151

Index, 169

This page intentionally left blank

Visions of Awakening Space and Time

This page intentionally left blank

I

The Pivotal Lotus Story and Dōgen's Worldview

In the modern Western appropriation of Zen Buddhism, Zen often has been viewed as an intriguing but abstract philosophical doctrine, or as a spiritual exercise designed to achieve higher states of personal consciousness or a therapeutic calm. However, the Zen tradition in East Asia developed as a branch of the Mahāyāna bodhisattva teachings, dedicated to universal liberation. As a religion with soteriological aims, Zen is based on and grew out of a Buddhist worldview far apart from the currently prevalent preconceptions of a world formed of Newtonian objectifications. This objective worldview still clouds our attitudes toward many realms, including the study of religion, even though it has now been discredited by new cutting-edge physics. Contrary to present conventions, Zen Buddhism developed and cannot be fully understood outside of a worldview that sees reality itself as a vital, ephemeral agent of awareness and healing.

Probably the most prolific writer among the historical Zen masters is Eihei Dōgen (1200–1253), considered the founder of the Sōtō Zen tradition in Japan, which is now spreading in many places in the West. Dōgen's various writings have been widely translated and commented on in recent decades and have played a major role in the importation of Buddhism into the West. Dōgen traveled as a young monk to China in 1223, where he met his teacher, and then in 1227 brought back the Sōtō Zen lineage, founding a training monastery, Eiheiji, and an order of monks that became Japanese Sōtō Zen. Dōgen's writings are among the most voluminous and wide-ranging

of any East Asian Buddhist figure and are filled with references both to the recorded sayings of traditional Chan masters and also to many sutras.

Dōgen often cites the Mahāyāna sutras. Among these, he by far most frequently cites the *Saddharmapuṇḍarīka Sūtra*, commonly known as the *Lotus Sutra*. This sutra was the scripture most venerated in the Tendai school, in which Dōgen was first ordained and trained. But even after his return from four years of Chan training in China in 1227, when he began to spread the Zen teachings in Japan (especially its huge kōan lexicon, of which Dōgen had achieved exceptional mastery), he continued to frequently cite and to venerate the *Lotus Sutra* until his death in 1253.

This work shows how Dōgen used the *Lotus Sutra* especially to express his worldview of earth, space, and time themselves as awakening agents in the bodhisattva liberative project. I focus particularly on Dōgen's citations of the pivotal story in chapters 15 and 16 of the sutra. This story concerns the bodhisattvas emerging from the earth who will preserve and expound the Lotus teaching in the distant future, and the resulting revelation that the Buddha only appears to pass away as a skillful means, but actually has been practicing, and will continue to do so, over an inconceivably lengthy life span. I explore Dōgen's interpretations of this story and how he treats its images and metaphors to express his own religious worldview of the liberative qualities of spatiality and temporality.

The visions portrayed in this story of the underground bodhisattvas and the Buddha's inconceivable life span demonstrate the basis for the development of Mahāyāna practices of transcendent enactment and faith. The range of perspectives of Dōgen's contemporary Kamakura-period figures and of other prominent East Asian Buddhists concerning the key teachings in these chapters also illuminate possibilities for contemporary twenty-first-century approaches to understanding fundamental Mahāyāna orientation and awareness.

The Story: Telling the Tale

Turning to the sutra story itself, I offer the following paraphrase of the entire narrative, which appears in chapters 15 and 16 of Kumārajīva's translation of the *Lotus Sutra*, the standard version in East Asia.[1] A group of bodhisattvas have been visiting from a distant world system in order to hear Śākyamuni (the historical Buddha) preach the *Lotus Sutra*. At the beginning of chapter 15, they ask the Buddha if he would like them to return in the future to maintain the *Lotus Sutra* teaching. Śākyamuni Buddha has been soliciting such future assistance in previous chapters for the period to follow his imminent

demise and passage into nirvāṇa, and especially for the distant future "evil age." Historically many *Lotus Sutra* devotees have identified their own period with this evil age. This was certainly true for Dōgen's contemporaries in Kamakura-period Japan, who thought they had entered the degenerate age of *mappō*, the final decline of the Dharma. It might seem true as well for contemporary interpreters in our own evil age of cycles of terrorist vengeance, environmental devastation, massive corruption, and preemptive wars of aggression.

As soon as the visiting bodhisattvas make their offer, Śākyamuni declares their help unnecessary, whereupon, "from out of the open space under the ground" simultaneously spring forth vast numbers of experienced, dedicated bodhisattvas. The immensity of their numbers and of their retinues of attendant bodhisattvas is expressed in conventional Mahāyāna mathematical metaphors about the number of grains of sand in the Ganges River. Each of the bodhisattvas offers appropriate ritual veneration to the Buddha. The names of their four leaders are mentioned: Superior Conduct, Boundless Conduct, Pure Conduct, and Steadfast Conduct.[2] Śākyamuni Buddha declares that for countless ages all of these numerous bodhisattvas have been diligently practicing under the ground, have been present to help aid and awaken suffering beings, and will continue their beneficial practice and promulgation of the teaching even through the future evil age.

Maitreya Bodhisattva, predicted to be the next future incarnated buddha, voices the questions of the startled and puzzled assembly of Śākyamuni's disciples as to the identities and backgrounds of these emerging bodhisattvas, previously unknown to the regular disciples. Śākyamuni declares that he himself has trained all these underground bodhisattvas. Even more perplexed, Maitreya asks how that could be possible, as these unfamiliar underground bodhisattvas are obviously venerable sages, some considerably more aged than Śākyamuni. This would be like a twenty-five-year-old saying he is the father of a hundred-year-old son. Maitreya recounts that all the disciples know that Śākyamuni was born some eight decades before, left his palace in his late twenties, and after undergoing austerities discovered the Middle Way and awakened under the bodhi tree four decades previous to his present expounding of the *Lotus Sutra*.

This question leads to the climactic teaching of the whole sutra, the revelation in chapter 16 by Śākyamuni Buddha that he only seems to be born, awaken, and pass away as a teaching expedient. He declares that, in actuality, he has been awakened and practicing through an inconceivably long life span, and for many ages past and future is present to awaken beings. The extent of this time frame is depicted with vast astronomical metaphors. The Buddha explains that he appears to live a limited life and pass away into nirvāṇa only

as a skillful means for the sake of all those beings who would be dissuaded from their own diligent conduct, and miss the importance of their own attentive practice, by the knowledge of the Buddha's omnipresence.

The Buddha illustrates the situation with one of the parables characteristic of the *Lotus Sutra*, in which a good physician returns home to find his many sons delusional after having taken poison. The physician offers them good medicine as an antidote, but many refuse to take it because of their delusions. They are finally willing to take and be cured by the medicine only when brought to their senses by grief after hearing a false report that their father has passed away.

The Story's Position in the Sutra

Both doctrinally and in terms of literary structure, the fifteenth and sixteenth chapters of the sutra are pivotal chapters. They present central aspects of the *Lotus Sutra* teachings about the meaning of bodhisattva activity and awareness in space and time and also serve to separate the two main sections of the sutra.[3]

Going back to early Chinese commentators such as Daosheng (ca. 360–434; Dōshō in Japanese) and Tiantai Zhiyi (538–597; Tendai Chigi in Japanese), founder of the Chinese Tiantai school, the first fourteen chapters of the sutra have been considered the cause, or practice section, and the last fourteen chapters, beginning with this story, have been marked as a separate section indicating the fruit of practice. This demarcation was also designated as between the "trace teaching" (*shakumon*) and the "origin teaching" (*honmon*).[4] This division between what is traditionally called the cause and result halves of the sutra also conveys its conventional and ultimate meanings, respectively. Zhiyi, and much of East Asian Buddhism after him, considered the *Lotus Sutra* sections prior to this story to be the trace teachings about the historical Buddha as the manifested trace of the fundamental teaching and of the fundamental or original Buddha, who is revealed in chapter 16 as having an inconceivably long life span. The remainder of the sutra, including and after this revelation, is then designated the fundamental teaching.

The primary structural boundary in the sutra that is marked by this story also reflects a major shift in the trajectory and history of Mahāyāna practice. The practice or cause portion of the sutra reflects the traditional Indian approach of rigorous bodhisattva cultivation over numerous lifetimes as the precursor to eventual buddhahood in the distant future. This is presented in the first half of the sutra itself via numerous predictions by Śākyamuni of

future buddhahood in named buddha lands for his specific disciples, all set in the far distant future after a great many lifetimes of their practice. Teachings with this approach to the Mahāyāna detail many elaborate systems of stages of development of bodhisattva practice. This cause section of the sutra emphasizes the diversity of skillful means in the variety of teachings presented by the Buddha, all directed at the great One Vehicle and the single great cause for buddhas appearing in the world: to lead suffering beings into the path to awakening.

On the other hand, the full realization of the inconceivable life span of Buddha, and thus his omnipresence in the subsequent fruit of practice phase of the sutra, can be seen as a significant inspiration for sudden or rapid awakening practice beyond stages of development. The teaching of rapid awakening became a major Mahāyāna approach to practice in East Asia.

Implications of the Story for Mahāyāna Praxis

This complex story of the underground bodhisattvas and the Buddha's inconceivable life span expresses the vastness and the immanence of the sacred in space as well as time and breaks open limited, conventional, linear perspectives of both space and time. It bears a variety of practical and theoretical implications that were critical to the development of East Asian Buddhist practice and faith.

The visions portrayed in this story demonstrate a foundation for the development of East Asian Mahāyāna practices of transcendent faith and ritual enactment of buddhahood, dependent not on lifetimes of arduous practice, but rather on immediate, unmediated, and intuitional realization of the fundamental ground of awakening. Paul Groner has described this shift as "shortening the path," in which there is the possibility of the path to liberation occurring rapidly.[5] Jan Nattier describes this same shift as from a "progress philosophy" to a "leap philosophy," referring to categories from Karl Potter, in which gradual progress over lifetimes of cultivation is replaced by a leap.[6] Historically in East Asia, we might see such a leap enacted via the various approaches to "sudden enlightenment" or underlying realization in the Chan/Zen traditions, but also in the "leap" of faith in the more devotional traditions, such as the mind of faith (*shinjin*) in the teachings of Dōgen's contemporary Shinran (1173–1263).[7]

This shift to rapid awakening is most directly exemplified in the *Lotus Sutra* itself by the speedy arrival at enlightenment of the eight-year-old Naga princess in the Devadatta chapter, chapter 12 in Kumārajīva's version of the

sutra. This story is highly radical in the Mahāyāna tradition, as the Naga princess rapidly attains enlightenment even though she is only a child and is not quite human, aside from being female (and thus inferior in patriarchal Asia). But the theoretical context for the shift to immediate realization of awakening is most fully revealed in the story in chapters 15 and 16, with its depiction of Buddha's omnipresence throughout vast reaches of time.

This omnipresence and the revelation of his vast life span bear implications for the ontological status of Buddha and raises issues for his soteriological function and efficacy. The initial image of the underground bodhisattvas as awakening teachers, benefactors, or guides emerging from the earth, "the open space under the ground," has resonance with a variety of mythic motifs. Through Dōgen's references to these images, this work explores the symbolic, spiritual significance of both this story of chthonic bodhisattvas springing forth from the ground to maintain sacred teachings and diligently protect beings, and the story of Buddha's inconceivable life span. These narratives reveal the nature of the divine in the bodhisattva tradition and the purpose of its spiritual practice.

Dōgen's Radical Worldview and Its Diverse Sources

Dōgen's perspectives on the key teachings in these *Lotus Sutra* chapters, and how he refers to them, help reveal and clarify his dynamic view of earth, space, and time. Dōgen's radical worldview is one of the most striking features of his teaching. His view of time, especially from his notable 1240 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Being Time" ("Uji"), has received much attention in modern commentaries.[8] But the totality of his worldview, including of earth and space, has not yet been given appropriate consideration.

The sources for Dōgen's Mahāyāna worldview are hardly limited to the *Lotus Sutra*. Before considering his references to chapter 15 and 16 of the *Lotus Sutra*, and how they illuminate and express his perspective, a brief reference to other sources for this worldview and some examples of his fundamental expressions of it will be helpful.

Other relevant contexts in East Asian Mahāyāna thought include the writings of the Tiantai scholar Zhanran (711–782; Tannen in Japanese), who articulated the teaching potential of grasses and trees, traditionally seen as inanimate and thus inactive objects.[9] Zhanran devoted an entire treatise to explicating the buddha nature of insentient things, though the Sanlun school exegete Chizang (549–623; Kichizō in Japanese) had previously argued that the distinction between sentient and insentient was not viable.[10] The devel-

opment of buddha nature discourse in China is clearly a significant source for Dōgen's thinking. In his 1241 essay "Buddha Nature" ("Busshō," included in one of his masterworks, *True Dharma Eye Treasury*; *Shōbōgenzō* in Japanese) Dōgen expresses his persistent stance of radical nonduality when he takes the important *Mahāparinirvāṇa Sūtra* saying, "All sentient beings without exception have the Buddha nature," and plays with the Chinese characters to rewrite it as "All sentient beings completely are Buddha nature."[11] In this statement and his extended commentary, Dōgen argues for the all-pervasiveness of buddha nature.

Another source for Dōgen's view of reality is the Chinese Huayan teachings, based on the *Avataṃsaka Sūtra*, or *Flower Ornament Sutra*, which describes the interconnectedness of all particulars. Thereby the world is a site of radical, mutual interconnection of the subjective and objective, in which each event is the product of the interdependent co-arising of all things. Huayan teachers such as Fazang (643–712; Hōzō in Japanese) developed and elaborated this vision. It can be described with their philosophical fourfold dialectic of mutual nonobstruction of the universal and the particular, and beyond that, the mutual nonobstruction of the particulars with "other" particulars.[12]

This Huayan dialectic was elaborated in Chinese Chan with the Five Degree or Five Ranks philosophy of the interrelationship of universal and particular that was first enunciated by Dongshan Liangjie (807–869; Tōzan Ryōkai in Japanese), considered the founder of the Chinese Caodong (Japanese Sōtō) lineage, which Dōgen later brought from China to Japan.[13] Dōgen only occasionally refers explicitly to this Five Rank dialectic of interfusion of the ultimate within the particulars of the world. But it is clearly pervasive as a background in much of his philosophical teachings. Dongshan also was significant in echoing the Tiantai teacher Zhanran about the buddha nature of nonsentient things (although apparently without any reference to the *Lotus Sutra*, the most esteemed Tiantai scripture). Dongshan's elaborate story of awakening with his teacher Yunyan Tansheng (781–841; Ungan Donjō in Japanese) centered on his question of whether nonsentient things could expound the Dharma.[14]

Another source can be seen in the worldview of Japanese Vajrayāna, also referred to as Esoteric, or *mikkyō*, Buddhism, whose enactment approach to practice is discussed in chapter 2. Although mikkyō teachings first entered Japan through the Shingon school, they had been fully integrated into Tendai, the Japanese development of the Tiantai school, long before Dōgen was initiated into Tendai monasticism as a teenager.

Thus there are a variety of Mahāyāna sources, including buddha nature discourse and Huayan and Caodong/Sōtō dialectics, that provide a context for

Dōgen's worldview. But it is the *Lotus Sutra* that Dōgen himself frequently cites to express his views of earth, space, and time, and his relevant references to its chapters 15 and 16, on which this study focuses.

The cosmological perspective of the world as an active agent of awakening is evident even in Dōgen's earliest writings. His "Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way" ("Bendōwa"), written in 1231, is his fundamental text on the meaning of *zazen*, or seated meditation (now considered part of *Shōbōgenzō*). In the "Self-Fulfillment Samādhi" (*jijuyū zanmai*) section of this writing (just preceding the long question-and-answer section), Dōgen avows that when even one person sits upright in meditation, "displaying the buddha mudra with one's whole body and mind," then "everything in the entire dharma world becomes buddha mudra, and all space in the universe completely becomes enlightenment."[15] (Mudrā usually refers to a spiritually impactful hand gesture, but here it connotes the whole of the upright seating posture in zazen.) The notion that space, the world surrounding the practitioner, can itself become enlightenment or awakening goes beyond Chinese buddha nature formulations and is profoundly subversive to conventional modern viewpoints. In this passage Dōgen continues to elaborate on this awakening of all things. Echoing Zhanran and Dongshan, he adds that "earth, grasses and trees, fences and walls, tiles and pebbles, all things in the dharma realm in ten directions, carry out buddha work." Not only are the landscape features of the world dynamically active, but they also are agents of enlightening activity. Moreover, and quite significantly, the meditator and the particular elements of the world "intimately and imperceptibly assist each other."

According to Dōgen there is a clear and beneficial mutuality in the interrelationship between the practitioner and the environment. "Grasses and trees, fences and walls demonstrate and exalt it for the sake of living beings; and in turn, living beings, both ordinary and sage, express and unfold it for the sake of grasses and trees, fences and walls."[16] This world is very far from being an objective, Newtonian realm of dead objects that humans hold dominion over and manipulate and utilize for their human agendas. Rather, the myriad aspects of phenomena are all energetic partners in spiritual engagement and devotion.

This dynamic perspective on space is expressed in a great many of Dōgen's voluminous writings. One other revealing example appears in his 1244 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Turning the Dharma Wheel" ("Tembōrin"), a story that Dōgen repeats in his other major work, *Eihei Kōroku*, in Dharma hall discourse 179 given in 1246.[17] In both texts he begins with a saying about space by Śākyamuni Buddha from the *Śurāṅgama Sūtra*, along with revised versions

of that statement in commentary by four great Chinese Chan masters, including Dōgen's own teacher.[18] Dōgen then gives his own commentary version, disclosing his radical view of the spiritual nature of space, which here is the reality of all the world of particulars.

The historical Buddha's original statement is, "When one person opens up reality and returns to the source, all space in the ten directions disappears."[19] One possible interpretation of this is that when one person completely awakens, the space between things and all separation dissolves in the unity and harmony of the interconnectedness of all being. Then Dōgen presents the four Chinese masters' variations on this statement, with different outcomes for what happens "when one person opens up reality and returns to the source." For the important Linji lineage master Wuzu Fayan (1024–1104; Goso Hōen in Japanese), upon the opening of reality and return to the source, "all space in the ten directions crashes together resounding everywhere." For his successor Yuanwu Keqin (1063–1135; Engo Kokugon in Japanese), compiler and commentator of the celebrated *Blue Cliff Record* (*Hekigan Roku*), in all space "flowers are added on brocade." For Yuanwu's successor Fuxing Fatai (n.d.; Busshō Hōtai in Japanese), "When one person opens up reality and returns to the source, all space in the ten directions is simply all space." These evocative responses indicate respect for and celebration of the world as the place in which awakening occurs and then may further adorn the world. For Dōgen's own teacher, Tiantong Rujing (1163–1228; Tendō Nyojō in Japanese), however, when someone returns to the source, "a mendicant breaks his rice bowl," which might indicate more personally a seeker's completion of his work.

But Dōgen's own version of this utterance expresses a deeper appreciation for the vitality of the spatial environment and for the actual spiritual potency and capacity of the world to manifest awakening. He states, "When one person opens up reality and returns to the source, all space in the ten directions opens up reality and returns to the source."[20] For Dōgen it is in such a world, capable of its own awakening, that bodhisattva practitioners act to benefit beings and foster their awakening.

These examples of Dōgen's view of space are offered here as introductory background for the explorations to follow of how he uses references to the *Lotus Sutra* story in chapters 15 and 16 to express his views of space, as well as of time and of the earth itself. Broader awareness of Dōgen's worldview and its implications may illuminate the possibilities for contemporary approaches to understanding primary Mahāyāna practices and outlook and their shift that occurred in East Asia.

Before directly considering references to chapters 15 and 16 of the *Lotus Sutra* in Dōgen's writings, the next two chapters consider some of the hermeneutic and methodological implications of the *Lotus Sutra* as it interfaces with Dōgen. Chapter 3 explores the responses to the sutra's chapters 15 and 16 by a selection of other prominent East Asian Buddhist figures.

2

Hermeneutics and Discourse Styles in Studies of the *Lotus Sutra* and Dōgen

This chapter surveys some of the hermeneutical and methodological considerations that arise in exploring the confluence of the *Lotus Sutra* and Dōgen's writings. Given the approximately forty-five-year length of the historical Śākyamuni Buddha's preaching career, the great diversity of students of different capacities he addressed, and the production (or "recovery," according to the Mahāyāna tradition) of new scriptures over nearly a millennium after his life, there has been a consequent wide range and diversity of sutras. Thus theories of understanding or interpretation, known as hermeneutics in religious studies, have always been an integral part of Buddhist philosophy and practice.

Mahāyāna sutras and Zen kōans and sermons are usually not didactic works presenting systematic doctrines, but rather instrumental texts aimed at inciting particular *samādhi*, or concentration, states and insights. They often include colorful stories or parables and require subtle textual interpretation and exploration of narrative and metaphor usage to demonstrate their inner meanings and logic. The book *Buddhist Hermeneutics* edited by Donald Lopez was a landmark work that articulated and clarified how some of the many traditional Buddhist teaching formulations can be understood as hermeneutical approaches to textual interpretation. Current works in the field of Buddhist studies have demonstrated the complexity of the actual lived tradition, as opposed to simplistic theories of its historical development that have been commonly held, both in sectarian and

in some modern deconstructionist treatments. Prime examples are the fine recent studies of Dōgen's own Kamakura-period Buddhism that have debunked simplistic stereotypes, such as the clichés about the new Buddhist movements and the decadence of the old schools, while also carefully illuminating the contents of Buddhist teaching and philosophy.[1]

The following three highly influential Mahāyāna Buddhist teachings, all of importance in considerations of the *Lotus Sutra*, are those approaches most evident in Dōgen's teaching. These Buddhist hermeneutical theories, skillful means (*upāya* in Sanskrit), the Buddha womb (*Tathāgata garbha* in Sanskrit), and enactment or performance praxis, together present a useful approach to East Asian Mahāyāna hermeneutics.

Skillful Means and Liberative Function

The foremost Mahāyāna hermeneutical principle is skillful or expedient means. Upāya sees the range and diversity of the sutras as an appropriate response to the diversity of suffering beings and honors the practical requirements for diverse methodologies. No single technique addresses the whole variety of individual, fluid obstacles to healing and liberation. So an essential part of the spiritual work in Buddhism is the hermeneutical project of understanding how to assess and use the variety of approaches, the diversity of teachings and their interpretations.

In terms of skillful means, one can understand the meaning of a text, and its place in the whole body of diverse teachings, by considering how it might be helpful for the alleviation of a particular source of suffering and how efficacious to liberation from various preconceptions. One might also interpret the significance of the teaching or instruction in a text by examining, where some historical evidence is available, the context of the audience to whom the teaching was addressed.

An example from Dōgen is the impact on his teaching of his many prominent students who had previously studied in the Daruma-shū, an earlier Zen movement in Japan.[2] To counter views from that school, Dōgen criticized the "naturalist heresy," the view that enlightenment would spontaneously arise for those who had some understanding or awakening experience, with no further practice required. It is now considered that Dōgen's extremely sharp criticisms in a couple of essays of the Song Linji lineage teacher Dahui (1089–1163; Dai-e in Japanese), and even of Linji (d. 867; Rinzai in Japanese) himself, were Dōgen's attempt to counter their contribution to these views of the previous Daruma-shū students.[3]

The primary locus of the hermeneutics of skillful means in Buddhism is the *Lotus Sutra*. Chapter 2 of the sutra discusses and is entitled "Skillful Means." Subsequent chapters offer a series of parables illustrating skillful means, perhaps most prominent being the parable of the burning house in chapter 3. A man comes home to find his house in flames and his children blithely playing inside. They refuse to leave because they just want to have fun. The father finally cajoles them outside with promises of a variety of many-splendored carriages drawn by diverse animals. When they reach safety outside the conflagration, they discover that he has only One Vehicle, which effectively embraces all. The sutra emphasizes that the man was not guilty of falsehood, because he acted to save the children. This preeminent story of skillful means is quite similar to the parable at the end of chapter 16 on the Buddha's long life span, about the physician who pretends to be dead so that his children will take their medicine.

These stories point to the hermeneutics of the unity of diverse expedients and complement the complex dialectical hermeneutics of Huayan Buddhism in which each element expresses the universal, which in turn embraces all particularities. To see all skillful means as ultimately cooperating in One Vehicle (*Ekayāna* in Sanskrit) aimed at universal liberation allows for the possibility of a noncompeting, cooperative approach to interpretation, in which diverse viewpoints and hermeneutical approaches may be seen as compatible and even mutually informing. It should be noted that, although this skillful means and One Vehicle can indeed function as an inclusive, pluralistic approach to interpretation, skillful means has sometimes also been presented in a hierarchical, condescending manner to privilege some approaches over others, as will be discussed more fully in the section "The Self-Reflexive as a Skillful Mode."

The purpose of Buddhism is liberation from the karmic cycle of suffering via awakening, and the goal of the Mahāyāna is the awakening of all beings. In chapter 2 the *Lotus Sutra* states, in the line probably most often cited by Dōgen, that the sole cause for a buddha's appearing in the world is to help the diverse suffering beings enter into, open up, disclose, and fully realize this awakening.[4] The one great cause for Buddha's manifesting is also the one great cause for the expounding of Buddhist teachings. So it is a primary hermeneutical principle and criterion of all interpretations of Buddhist texts that they be evaluated based on their effectiveness as liberative instruments.

Tathāgata garbha

Much of Chinese Buddhism emphasizes the teachings of Tathāgata garbha, or "buddha womb," about the buddha nature of all beings, referring to the

omnipresent potential for awakening. According to these teachings, the latent openness and clear awareness of the buddha nature is available to all beings and can manifest once the obscurations of karmic conditioning, attachments, and habitual responses are dispelled. Ultimately the awakened reality designated by suchness consists of the same epistemological and practical content as the teaching of emptiness, but viewed from differing hermeneutical positions.

The Tathāgata garbha was a highly appealing philosophical underpinning in China, as it implied a positive ontological ground for Buddhist practice, even within the secular realm. According to the *Śrimāla Sūtra*, an early scripture espousing the Tathāgata garbha, this womb of buddhas is the basis, support, and foundation of the world of saṃsāra, the conditioned realm of suffering. "Since the *tathāgata garbha* is the enlightened wisdom of the Tathāgata which exists embryonically in all sentient beings, the fact that it is also the ultimate ontological basis of reality has important soteriological consequences. It means that the basis of Buddhist practice is grounded in the very structure of reality."[5] The whole world is depicted as a womb, nurturing the development and emergence of new buddhas, but this imagery is also reversed in Tathāgata garbha theory inasmuch as *garbha* can mean both womb and embryo. So the awakening buddha is also like a womb giving birth to the awakened land of a buddha field, the realm or environment constellated simultaneously with a buddha's awakening.

The Chinese Huayan thinkers took up this Tathāgata garbha as a foundation for their dialectical theories of the mutual interpenetration of universal and particular. Based on the philosophy of the buddha nature, which would be significantly elaborated by Dōgen, the Huayan dialectics about the mutual interactivity of universal and particular, and of particulars with particulars, was developed into the Huayan theory of the Fourfold Dharmadhātu (the four realms of reality, mentioned briefly in the previous chapter). These four are the realms of particulars, the universal, the mutual unobstructed interpenetration of the particular and the universal, and the mutual unobstructed interpenetration of the particular with the particular.

This Tathāgata garbha theory poses a basic complex of hermeneutical approaches for Chinese Buddhism. Teachings can be interpreted, for example, based on whether they focus on the aspect of the universal or the particular. This degree of relationship of various teachings with the universal or the particular became the basis of Chan dialectic formulations, such as the Caodong (Sōtō) Five Ranks theories (mentioned in the previous chapter among sources for Dōgen's worldview).[6] These theories can also be used as lenses for interpreting other teachings. Thus the Tathāgata garbha and all the theories that

derive from it offer a range of hermeneutical criteria for approaching texts for interpretation.

The positive aspect of the buddha womb view, with buddha nature as an ontological ground as well as a basis for practice, indicates the prospect of multiple positive meanings. Texts can be interpreted constructively by showing how they refer to varying expressions of buddha nature and its potential for being realized. The obstructions to buddha nature of karmic conditioning and afflictions also pose a field of multiplicity that can be explicated through linguistic analysis of a text. The hermeneutics of polysemy is especially relevant to the Tathāgata garbha's unfolding in Huayan dialectics. The Huayan Fourfold Dharmadhatu (as well as the later Sōtō Five Ranks system) concerns the multiple levels of interaction of the particular and the universal. Modern approaches to multiplicity of meanings can be helpful in revealing the varying aspects of particular and universal, which might be discerned in a given text under interpretation. Visionary samādhi texts such as the *Avatamsaka Sutra*, as well as many of the classical Zen kōans, play extensively with the interaction of these varying levels of meaning, often in ways not immediately apparent.

A spiritual text creates a whole world pregnant with meanings that must be faced by any interpreter. This world is certainly analogous to the image of the buddha womb that is the starting point of all the Tathāgata garbha hermeneutics. The buddha womb is the container of potential buddhas and is endowed with the capacity to give birth to buddhas. Similarly, the world of a spiritual text is a womb that can give birth, through the agency of interpretation, to a multiplicity of awakening and healing meanings. So one can see sutras themselves as wombs of buddha, available to give birth to awakening teachings and insights. And in the other direction, in accord with the reversible meaning of garbha as both womb and embryo, awakened interpretation can thus create (or re-create) the sutra as an awakening buddha field.

Enactment Practice and Performance Hermeneutics

As a final primary Buddhist hermeneutical principle, Chinese Chan strongly championed the soteriological emphasis on the actual experience as opposed to the intellectual comprehension and analysis of the teaching.[7] This has traditionally been expressed in the Chan axiom "Direct pointing to the Mind, not depending on words and letters." This saying, attributed to the legendary Chan founder Bodhidharma (d. 532?), has at times been interpreted as an anti-intellectual rejection of scriptures and of all textual study, but more usefully it

may be seen as simply the nonattachment to any particular written articulation of religious teaching, a form of hermeneutics of suspicion of all texts.

Ironically, Chan/Zen has produced its own massive literary corpus. But through emphasis on meditation and ritual practices, Zen has also retained a particular experiential hermeneutics of enactment that takes priority even over its own literature. The emphasis on direct meditative experience was not to be deterred by elegant but nonpractical expositions of reality.

Zen shares with the Vajrayāna (tantric) tradition this hermeneutics of the heart of spiritual activity/praxis as the enactment of buddha awareness and physical presence, rather than aiming at a perfected, formulated understanding. This is especially important as a background for Dōgen's praxis. In the context of Tibetan Buddhism, Robert Thurman speaks of the main thrust of Vajrayāna hermeneutics and practice as physical rather than merely mental: "When we think of the goal of Buddhism as enlightenment, we think of it mainly as an attainment of some kind of higher understanding. But Buddhahood is a physical transformation as much as a mental transcendence."[8]

Kūkai (774–835), the great founder of Shingon "True Word," the Japanese Vajrayāna tradition, also emphasized the effects of teachings over their literal meaning. As explicated by Thomas Kasulis, "Kūkai was more interested in the teachings' *aims* than in their content, or perhaps better stated, he saw the aims as inseparable from their content. He saw no sharp distinction between theory and practice." The understanding of a teaching was not privileged independently from its practical effects: "The truth of a statement depends not on the status of its referent, but on how it affects us."[9]

The Vajrayāna emphasizes the expression of teachings in the three dimensions of body, speech, and mind, via the practice modes of mudrā, mantra, and maṇḍala. These practices are enactments of the teachings, more to the point than any theoretical formulations. For Kūkai, language is not an abstract system for analyzing some objective meaning separate from itself. Rather, words, physical postures, and mental imagery are microcosmic representations of the ultimate reality within the human realm. They are expressions of ultimate reality, and by engaging in them, we are led to realization of that reality. Therefore, this function of the mantric quality of utterance becomes "a hermeneutic criterion for interpreting and evaluating various religio-philosophical theories: the more a theory leads us to recognize the microcosmic and cosmic dimensions of reality, the more true the theory."[10] Thus the performance of the mantra or Dharmic utterance helps effect an expressive realization deeper than mere cognition.

Worth briefly noting is another aspect of performance in the use of texts as sacred material, which emerged in Vajrayāna and would be important in

Nichiren Buddhism's ritual response to the *Lotus Sutra*. Introducing a discussion of Ryōbu Shintō, which was heavily influenced by Shingon, Fabio Rambelli notes, "Medieval texts had not just a 'meaning'—understood as the 'signified' of the text itself as the 'signifier'—, but also several 'uses'—many of which were defined in a ritual way . . . [including the] performative nature of texts. . . . Texts had value not necessarily and not only for their meaning. . . . [They] were endowed with all the characteristics of sacred objects."[11] Text as object is not of central importance to Dōgen, although he does express veneration for sutras and texts from Zen ancestors. But his use of proclamation in his discourse style, discussed later in the chapter, shares the sense of the verbal text as holding meaning beyond anything "signified."

Both the Vajrayāna and the Zen emphasis is on fully expressed performance of reality, not its cognitive knowledge or interpretation, which reflects the valuing of actual bodhisattvic workings over theoretical dictums. In Japanese Zen this might also reflect, in part, its heritage as deriving from Tendai mikkyō, or Vajrayāna. The priority of performed expression may be seen as the source for hermeneutical criteria based on the realization of a teaching's enactment, rather than on cognitive comparisons. In his writing "Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way" ("Bendōwa"), discussed in chapter 1, Dōgen directly emphasizes the hermeneutical priority of the actualization of practice over doctrinal theory: "Buddhist practitioners should know not to argue about the superiority or inferiority of teachings and not to discriminate between superficial or profound dharma, but should only know whether the practice is genuine or false."[12] This hermeneutics of performance is reflected, for example, in the Japanese Sōtō Zen prescription "Dignified manner is Buddha Dharma; decorum is the essential teaching."[13]

The point is to enact the meaning of the teachings in actualized practice, often in ritual or ceremony. Indeed, the whole praxis, including meditation, may thus be viewed as ceremonial expressions of the teaching and its meaning, rather than as means to discover and attain some understanding of it. Therefore, the strong emphasis in much of Zen training is the mindful and dedicated expression of meditative awareness in everyday activities. The degree, effectiveness, and qualities of the actualized or manifested expression of the Dharmic reality of a teaching or text thus becomes a prime criterion for its interpretation.

Ricoeur and Metaphor

In Dōgen's interpretive references to the *Lotus Sutra* he is clearly in accord with modern principles of hermeneutics deriving from Schleiermacher and

Dilthey. As the French philosopher Paul Ricoeur (b. 1913) says, "Interpretation has certain subjective connotations, such as the implication of the reader in the processes of understanding and the reciprocity between interpretation of the text and self-interpretation. This reciprocity is known by the name of the hermeneutical circle; it entails a sharp opposition to the sort of objectivity and non-implication which is supposed to characterise the scientific explanation of things."[14] Dōgen uses his discussions of the *Lotus Sutra*, as he surely does his discussion of the kōan lexicon, to proclaim his own subjective teachings and to encourage the primary text as a vehicle for the self-interpretation of his audience, as well as himself.

Ricoeur focuses on issues concerning narrative structure and the role of metaphor in myths and in spiritual texts. In his exploration of metaphor and the problem of hermeneutics, he maintains that texts are open to an abundance of meaning as appropriate to the diverse worlds of each interpreter. A full investigation of the roles of metaphor, polysemy, and intertextuality in Dōgen's writing would be illuminating, but is far beyond the scope of this work. However, Dōgen's use of metaphor as applied to ground and space may be clarified by some of Ricoeur's discussion of metaphor. Ricoeur says, "The understanding of a work taken as a whole gives the key to metaphor. . . . The hermeneutical circle encompasses in its spiral both the apprehension of projected worlds and the advance of self-understanding in the presence of these new worlds."[15] Dōgen's playful interpretations of the world of the *Lotus Sutra* certainly express a preunderstanding of a "projected world," and also a self-understanding, or rather, his particular understanding of the inner nature of self itself, from his Buddhist perspective. His interpretive play with the world of the *Lotus Sutra*, in turn, further informs and explicates the world of Dharma and practice he is expressing.

Ricoeur's hermeneutical theory further supports the freestyle interpretation that Dōgen seems to relish; as Ricoeur says, "All of the connotations which are suitable must be attributed; the poem means all that it can mean." He also maintains that any part of a text, a passage or even a word, can have a metaphorical meaning that is open to interpretation and can inspire new senses of meaning: "We can describe the word as having a 'metaphorical use' or a 'non-literal meaning'; the word is always the bearer of the 'emergent meaning' which specific contexts confer upon it." Ricoeur thus provides a theoretical rationale for creative readings of a narrative by employing interpretive word play. Like Dōgen, he encourages the readers' or listeners' active interpretation of the text as part of the necessary process of understanding: "Interpretation thus becomes the apprehension of the proposed worlds which are opened up by the non-ostensive references of the text."[16] In his own interpretations,

whether of kōans or the *Lotus Sutra*, Dōgen reads various references into texts and inverts conventional grammar to more fully express his worldview and realm of practice.

Dōgen's Hermeneutics and the Manifestation and Proclamation of the Underground Bodhisattvas

Paul Ricoeur discusses the dialectical relationship between the manifestation of the sacred and the hermeneutics of proclamation.[17] Both manifestation and proclamation are central themes in the story of bodhisattvas emerging from earth and are illuminating of Dōgen's uses of the *Lotus Sutra*.

Ricoeur describes the manifestation of the sacred in terms of five aspects. First is the awesome sense of the sacred as irrational and overwhelming, a surprising, unexpectable emergence, certainly exemplified by the bodhisattvas springing out of the ground. Second is hierophany, or the manifestation of the sacred with heightened aesthetic intensity, both in space and time. The third aspect is the "nonlinguisticality" of the sacred. The sacred is created not via the word and its signifying, but through sacred behavior that consecrates the world through ritual, even transforming speech from discourse (or proclamation) to recitation performances. The bodhisattvas' initial emergence can be seen as such a performance, and they follow their emergence with ritual offerings to the Buddha. Also, the *Lotus Sutra* emphasizes ritualized recitation of itself. The fourth aspect of the sacred is the role of nature and natural elements in its manifestation. In this story the earth itself, cracking open to emit the bodhisattvas, provides a context for expression of the immanence of the divine in the natural world. (Later I will return to the earth in this story as a nature image.) Ricoeur's fifth aspect of the sacred is the logic of the correspondences in all the previous traits of manifestation. We might see the emerging bodhisattvas as representing the manifestation of the sacred (in Buddhism, the awakening function) emerging from the ground of being of all beings, immanent and underlying the karmic position of all persons.[18]

The hermeneutics of proclamation described by Ricoeur derives from the Judeo-Christian elevation of the Word, and thus contrasts with the use of proclamation by Dōgen, discussed later. In the Western religious proclamation the divine is expressed in discourse, which then overwhelms the numinous and the hierophanous manifestations of the sacred. Ricoeur states that, beginning in the Hebraic faith, "The numinous [manifestation] is just the underlying canvas from which the word [proclamation] detaches itself. . . . Hierophanies . . . withdraw to the extent that the instruction through the Torah

overcomes any manifestation through an image."[19] Ricoeur skillfully mines the possibilities for analyzing literary elements so as to explore and clarify diverse genres of the proclamation of the sacred. He discusses parables (in their "essential profaneness" presenting a "metaphor of normalcy"),[20] proverbs (with intensification of meaning through paradox), and eschatological sayings. He also discusses poetics and its mythic mimicry of reality. He is interested in the qualities of discourse that explode the conventional logic of meaning and point to something extraordinary, that is, sacred: "The paradoxical universe of the parable, the proverb, and the eschatological saying . . . is a 'burst' or an 'exploded' universe."[21] The sacred is thereby proclaimed seemingly without need for its manifestation. Particularly during the history of Christianity the proclamation of the Word and the manifestation of the Kingdom on earth have often become alienated.

Ricoeur starts his dialectic of the healing of the split between the manifestation and the proclamation of the sacred by fully acknowledging the desacralization of the world of modernity. He suggests that the function of the word is to reaffirm the sacred, instead of opposing its manifestation. He cites Hegel's view of Christ as the "absolute manifestation," so that finally "manifestation of the sacred is dialectically reaffirmed and internalized into proclamation."[22]

Both manifestation and proclamation are evident and crucial in the story of bodhisattvas emerging from earth. The bodhisattvas fully exemplify the manifestation of the sacred as immanent within the earth itself and ready to spring into action whenever needed to perform liberative work. Yet the very purpose of these bodhisattvas' manifestation and effort is to serve the maintenance of the proclamation of the *Lotus Sutra*. Such proclamation is of central importance in the *Lotus Sutra*, perhaps more than for any other Buddhist sutra, as will be discussed in the section on "The Self-Referential Lotus."

Because the appearance of the underground bodhisattvas expresses the immanent omnipresence of the manifestation of the sacred via liberative practitioners whose very function is to sustain the proclamation of their own immanence, the bodhisattvas' emergence exemplifies a symbiotic synthesis of manifestation and proclamation, as is the case for the entire story, including the revelation of the Buddha's inconceivable life span. This *Lotus Sutra* synthesis, existing near the inception of East Asian Mahāyāna Buddhist history, is foundational to both its manifestation and its proclamation. Thus it is different from the synthesis described by Ricoeur, who is dealing with the ages-long split between manifestation and proclamation carried on in Western religion and the consequent desacralization and secularization of the world of modernity. But Ricoeur's interest in language, and his articulation of proclamation

as a counterpoint to manifestation, provide a useful lens through which to clarify the important aspect of the underground bodhisattvas as proclaimers as well as embodiments of sacrality.

The Self-Referential Lotus

The *Lotus Sutra* itself frequently emphasizes the importance of and rewards for the proclamation of the *Lotus Sutra*, through reading, copying, and reciting it. To be sure, other Mahāyāna sutras talk about the merit to be derived by recalling or copying the sutra being read.[23] However, the *Lotus Sutra* at times seems to hold this self-referential quality at its center, such that it promotes an extreme mode of self-referential discourse that is unique to it. The sutra often speaks of the wondrous nature of the *Lotus Sutra*, right in the text commonly referred to as the *Lotus Sutra*. This rhetorical device can be startling and mind-twisting, like Escher's painting of two hands drawing each other. Various important figures in the sutra appear within the text of the *Lotus Sutra* because they have heard that the *Lotus Sutra* is currently being preached by Śākyamuni Buddha on Vulture Peak. For example, in chapter 11, the stūpa of the ancient Buddha Prabhūtaratna emerges from the earth and floats in midair because he has vowed always to appear *whenever* the *Lotus Sutra* is preached.[24] In the same chapter, myriad bodhisattvas arrive from world systems in all directions to praise the Buddha for preaching this sutra in which they themselves are appearing.

This quality of the sutra talking about the sutra, and especially its many references to the *Lotus Sutra* as something expounded many ages ago, as about to be expounded, or even as hopefully to be expounded in the distant future, has led some commentators to observe that the whole text of this sutra, more than any others, is a preface to a missing scripture. As George and Willa Tanabe say, "The preaching of the Lotus sermon promised in the first chapter *never takes place*. The text, so full of merit, is *about* a discourse which is never delivered; it is a lengthy preface without a book. The *Lotus Sutra* is thus unique among texts. It is not merely subject to various interpretations, as all texts are, but is open or empty at its very center."[25] This is a plausible perspective or interpretation. The text does refer, in third person, to a designated text that one might keep vainly waiting for, as if for Godot.

However, this perspective misses the manner in which the Lotus sermon certainly does exist. Fundamental messages of the Lotus, such as the One Vehicle and the primacy of the Buddha vehicle, are difficult to miss, even if they might be interpreted in various ways. Furthermore, between the lines the

Lotus Sutra functions within itself both as a sacred text or scripture and as a commentary and guidebook to its own use, beyond the literal confines of its own written text. The *Lotus Sutra* is itself a sacred manifestation of spiritual awakening that proclaims its own sacrality. Right within the text's proclamation of the wonders of a text with the same name as itself, the text celebrates its own ephemeral quality with the visionary splendors of its assembly of buddhas, bodhisattvas, and spirits, and with the engaging qualities of its parables.

The synthesis of the immanent spirit spoken about in the text and the text's own intended functioning as an instrument or skillful catalyst to spark awakening has been carried on among its followers. This is exemplified in the varieties of Nichiren Buddhism in that they are rooted and focused in devotion to the *Lotus Sutra* itself as a sacred manifestation, and devotional object, which they are committed to proclaiming and promulgating. But for Dōgen, the self-proclamation of the Dharma in the *Lotus Sutra* becomes an aspect of his rhetorical style rather than an externalized objectification.

Dōgen's Proclamation of Dharma

In a manner similar to the sutra's proclamations of the wondrous qualities of the Lotus Dharma, Dōgen in his writings commonly proclaims the wondrous nature of the Dharma, the Buddha, the many buddha ancestors, previous proclamations or utterances by ancestral teachers, and, of course, the *Lotus Sutra* itself. Dōgen's style of discourse is usually not explanatory, discursive, or logical in the linear manner of modern rationality or cognition. Rather, Dōgen seemingly free-associates, making illuminating connections based on doctrinal themes or imagistic motifs, aimed at proclaiming the nondual reality of the present phenomenal world as fully imbued with the presence of the Buddha and of the ongoing possibility of awakening.

A clear encapsulation of the *Lotus Sutra*'s self-proclamatory discourse strategy appears in volume 1 of Dōgen's *Eihei Kōroku* in two consecutive *jōdō*, or Dharma hall discourses, numbers 69 and 70, given in 1241.[26] Jōdō number 69 reads in its entirety:

> Today this mountain monk [Dōgen] gives a Dharma hall discourse for the assembly. What I have just said I offer to all the three treasures in the ten directions, to the twenty-eight Ancestors in India, to the six Ancestors in China, to all the nostrils under heaven, to the eyeballs throughout the past and present, to dried shitsticks, to three pounds of

> sesame, to Zen boards, and to zafus. Previously we offered incense for the limitless excellent causal conditions, and we dedicate it so that toads may leap up to Brahma's heaven, earthworms may traverse the eastern ocean, and clouds and water monks may become horses and cows. All buddhas, ten directions, three times; All honored ones, bodhisattva mahāsattvas; Māhāprajñāpāramitā.[27]

Here Dōgen states that he is proclaiming a jōdō. But immediately, without saying anything more *about* the Dharma, he dedicates that statement itself to the three jewels, the ancestral teachers, to meditation paraphernalia, and to famed Chan iconoclastic expressions for Buddha, the dried shitstick (or dry turd) of Yunmen Wenyan (864–949; Unmon Bun'en in Japanese) and the three pounds of sesame (or flax) of Yunmen's disciple Dongshan Shouchu (910–990: Tōzan Shusho in Japanese).[28] He then further dedicates the incense offering, which had preceded the statement that he was now making a statement, to toads, earthworms, and monks who manifest as horses and cows, followed by the traditional concluding liturgical dedication. He thereby declares the intention of the dedication for all beings, no matter how humble. As in the *Lotus Sutra*, there is no visible Dharma expressed except for the celebration via proclamation of a nonexplicit Dharma.

But then, in the following jōdō, number 70, Dōgen explicitly comments on his own use of self-referential Dharma, while engaging even further in celebrating an unexpressed Dharma. We do not know how many days may have separated the two discourses. In this section of the text, between the jōdōs that can be dated and that are four months apart, there were an average of two discourses per week. But whatever the interval, it is clear in the overall text of *Eihei Kōroku* that the different discourses, recorded chronologically with only very rare exceptions, are often linked sequentially through the associations of theme, imagery, ancestral figures, or textual allusion. In jōdō number 70 Dōgen writes:

> As this mountain monk [Dōgen] today gives a Dharma hall discourse, all buddhas in the three times also today give a Dharma hall discourse. The Ancestral teachers in all generations also today give a Dharma hall discourse. The one who bears the sixteen-foot golden body gives a Dharma hall discourse. The one endowed with the wondrous function of the hundred grasses [all things] gives a Dharma hall discourse. Already together having given a Dharma hall discourse, what Dharma has been expounded? No other Dharma is expressed; but this very Dharma is expressed. What is this Dharma? It is upheld within Shanglan Temple; it is upheld within Guanyin

> Temple; it is upheld within the monks' hall; it is upheld within the Buddha hall.[29]

Again, Dōgen never talks about the content of his Dharma hall discourse. But he proclaims that his own act of proclaiming this self-referencing Dharma is echoed simultaneously in the discourses of the ancestral teachers and buddhas, just as the proclamation of the *Lotus Sutra* is echoed in various buddha realms, in various times. Then he asks the same question that the Tanabes ask about the *Lotus Sutra*: "What Dharma has been expounded?" And he answers unabashedly, "No other Dharma is expressed; but this very Dharma is expressed. What is this Dharma?" While not explaining or even stating some contents of this Dharma, his phrase "This very [*shako*] Dharma" might seem to refer to the teaching of suchness, or *tāthatā*, but it is also simply just this Dharma, as opposed to that one. Thereby Dōgen emphasizes not an abstraction, but the concreteness of this particular reality as the realm of Dharma. Then he does declare and affirm that this nonexplicit teaching is upheld in the context of the temples and the buildings where the practice is carried on.

The example in these two jōdōs of Dōgen's proclamation of a nonexplicit Dharma is presented in a direct and concise manner, as is appropriate to the often brief declarations of the jōdō form. But this rhetorical strategy recurs, more or less subtly, in many places throughout *Shōbōgenzō*, as well as in *Eihei Kōroku*. That he is adapting this rhetorical posture at least in part directly from the *Lotus Sutra* is clearly evidenced by another early jōdō in the *Eihei Kōroku*, number 24, given in 1240:

> In the entire universe in ten directions there is no Dharma at all that has not yet been expounded by all buddhas in the three times. Therefore all buddhas say, "In the same manner that all buddhas in the three times expound the Dharma, so now I also will expound the Dharma without differentiations." This great assembly present before me also is practicing the Way in the manner of all buddhas. Each movement, each stillness is not other than the Dharma of all buddhas, so do not act carelessly or casually. Although this is the case, I have an expression that has not yet been expounded by any buddha. Everyone, do you want to discern it?
>
> *After a pause Dōgen said*: In the same manner that all buddhas in the three times expound the Dharma, so now I also will expound the Dharma without differentiations.[30]

In this Dharma hall discourse Dōgen again does not elaborate on the content of the Dharma expounded by all buddhas in the three times, except to aver

that it is no other than every movement, and every stillness, and is practiced by the monks at Eiheiji. Significant to the point of the crucial importance of the *Lotus Sutra* to Dōgen is the context of this sentence from Śākyamuni Buddha, which Dōgen quotes: "In the same manner that all buddhas in the three times expound the Dharma, so now I also will expound the Dharma without differentiations." This statement that Dōgen uses to express the inexplicit Dharma proclaimed by all buddhas is a direct quote from the *Lotus Sutra*, chapter 2, on "Skillful Means."[31] Dōgen further emphasizes this quote when he repeats it verbatim as his own expression for the inexplicit Dharma, which he claims "has not yet been expounded by any buddha." But his saying that it has not previously been expounded is tantamount to Dōgen himself preaching the original *Lotus Sutra*, or to his own manifestation as the Buddha in the Lotus text in which it is first expounded.

There are ample examples of response with silence, or of indirect or inexplicit Dharma proclamation within the Chan literature that is Dōgen's primary lexicon. Yet the *Lotus Sutra* referent for this 1240 jōdō about expounding the Dharma clearly demonstrates that Dōgen himself saw the *Lotus Sutra*, "expounded by all buddhas in the three times," as an important source for his own self-proclamatory rhetorical style of expounding. Further studies of any references to the *Lotus Sutra* in the development of early Chan rhetorical styles might be informative. But it is apparent that Dōgen himself saw the Lotus as a primary model for his nondualistic, inexplicit discourse approach, expounding "the Dharma without differentiations."

The Self-Reflexive as a Skillful Mode

In *The Karma of Words*, William LaFleur discusses the sophisticated nature of the *Lotus Sutra* as literature and its impact on medieval Japanese poetics: "The surprising feature of [the parables] in the *Lotus* is that they are simultaneously the vehicle and the tenor of that vehicle. In a very important sense, the parables of the *Lotus* are about the role and status of parabolic speech itself. They are what I would call self-reflexive allegory; that is, their trajectory of discourse behaves like a boomerang. Much like the Dharma described in a crucial section of the hōben chapter, they are characterized by 'the absolute identity [or equality] of their beginning and end.' "[32]

LaFleur's analysis of this realm of discourse in the *Lotus Sutra* focuses on its radical nondualism and its embodiment of skillful means. This standpoint of nondualism represents interpretations of the *Lotus Sutra* developed in Tiantai and in Japanese Buddhism prior to Dōgen, and which impacted the

medieval literature LaFleur examines. From such a nondualistic viewpoint, LaFleur suggests translating *hōben* as "modes" rather than the more common translations of skillful or expedient means. Hurvitz translates hōben as "expedient devices," and Watson translates it as "expedient means," both implying a dualistic, and even manipulative, aspect of the teaching, especially when rendered as "devices," as by Hurvitz. Katō, Tamura, and Miyasaka translate it as "tactfulness," which implies more consideration and inclusivity, but might still be seen as implying a hierarchy of the teachings.

The upāya (or hōben) doctrine is a problematic aspect in the Lotus Ekayāna "One Vehicle" teaching. The *Lotus Sutra* at times has been upheld, within the sutra itself as well as by some of its followers, for example in the Tiantai *panjiao* ("classifying the teachings") system, as the epitome of the One Vehicle. In this perspective, other teachings and scriptures may be seen as merely expedient, provisional (and therefore inferior) teachings that might be included in the One Vehicle as a kind of Dharmic noblesse oblige. Such a view of upāya implies a hierarchy of teachings, and even a manipulative use of them. Unquestionably the *Lotus Sutra* sometimes lends itself to, and often explicitly encourages, a political, polemical reading in which the *Lotus Sutra*, and those who preach it, represent the True Dharma, and those who follow provisional, expedient teachings exemplify the chaff, inimical to the full teaching.

On the other hand, the alternative mode of reading the teaching of upāya, as presented by LaFleur, implies a radically nondualistic inclusivity and an acceptance of all helpful teachings as simply a diversity of "modes." Portions of the *Lotus Sutra* do indeed lend themselves to this more tolerant and inclusive reading of hōben. For example, in chapter 5 the parable of the Dharma rain falling universally on all implies no discrimination against any of the many plants that are equally nourished, each growing in their own way. Applied as appropriate to the diversity of needs of suffering beings, all teaching modes might be equally beneficial to the ultimate purpose for buddhas' manifestation, the soteriological and liberative function mentioned earlier. As proclaimed in the upāya chapter, "By resort to numberless devices and to various means, parables, and phrases do [buddhas] proclaim the dharmas . . . for one great cause appearing in the world . . . to cause beings to hear the Buddha's knowledge . . . to cause the beings to understand . . . to cause the beings to enter the path."[33] Such an inclusive reading of hōben might be usefully appropriated to modern concerns of religious pluralism, which may be LaFleur's subtext. But LaFleur's reading also has implications regarding styles of discourse, the primary issue under consideration here.

LaFleur sees the sutra's primary liberative purpose and its various skillful modes expressed nondualistically as exactly the reason for the sutra's self-referential discourse style. In his reading:

> The narratives of the *Lotus* are not a means to an end beyond themselves. Their concrete mode of expression is not "chaff" to be dispensed with in order to attain a more abstract, rational, or spiritual truth. The *Lotus* is unequivocal on this point: "One may seek in every one of the ten directions but will find no mode [*hōben*] other than the Buddha's." This accounts for what may seem to be an inordinate amount of praise directed by the sutra toward itself. It also implies that within the sutra there is an unmistakable philosophical move opposite to that in Plato's *Republic*, a move to affirm the complete reality of the world of concrete phenomena in spite of the fact that they are impermanent.[34]

This common Japanese association of the *Lotus Sutra* with affirmation of the reality of the phenomenal world, followed here by LaFleur, can be dated back to the Japanese Tendai founder Saichō (767–822). Having studied with two strongly Huayan-influenced disciples of the Chinese Tiantai master Zhanran, who had argued for the Buddha nature of insentient beings (a teaching that Dōgen would also later frequently celebrate), Saichō incorporated Huayan (Kegon) views of suchness into Tendai. But Saichō also applied this in an original way to his interpretation of the *Lotus Sutra*. His reading "not only acknowledges two aspects of suchness but establishes a hierarchy between the two in identifying the dynamic aspect of suchness—its expression as the phenomenal world—with the Tiantai category of the 'middle' and with the one vehicle of the *Lotus*. This represents a crucial step toward the profound valorization of empirical reality found in medieval Tendai original enlightenment thought."[35]

From this Japanese Tendai perspective of spiritual reality immanent in concrete phenomena, the *Lotus Sutra* itself is not separate from, or talking *about*, a realm of transcendent spirit outside of itself. Thus the *Lotus Sutra* itself can become an embodiment of the awakening aspect of the phenomenal world, omnipresent, at least in potentiality, in all concrete particulars. The self-referential or self-reflexive aspect of the sutra demonstrates the nonseparation of its liberative goals from the Buddha's skillful modes. Given the nonduality of purpose and context of the *Lotus Sutra* as a text that itself represents and enacts veneration of the world's liberative potential, it is reasonable that this very sutra would become an object of veneration, as in Nichiren Buddhism.

To be sure, Dōgen is not inclusive of the diverse modes of teachings in LaFleur's strictly nonhierarchical fashion, as, in common with all of the Kamakura-period innovators, Dōgen at times upholds his own teaching lineage and strongly disparages others'. However, Dōgen's use of Lotus-style self-referential discourse is directed at affirmation of the nondualism of means and end, and he repeatedly affirms the concrete realm of particulars as the arena of nondual practice-realization, in accord with LaFleur's view of the *Lotus Sutra* discourse as based on hōben. In a similar skillful mode, Dōgen often intentionally uses elaborate wordplay as vehicles to express the discourse he is then proclaiming. His frequent inversion of conventional word order and word meaning from classical kōans or sutras serves to express this quality of proclamation, in which the discourse itself demonstrates that which it is expounding.

A prominent example, mentioned in chapter 1, is the wordplay in *Shōbō-genzō*'s "Buddha Nature" ("Busshō"), first written in 1241, in which Dōgen retranslates the passage from the *Mahāparinirvāṇa Sūtra*, "All sentient beings without exception have Buddha nature." By rereading the characters *shitsu-u* as "whole being" rather than "all have," Dōgen alters the passage to "All sentient beings' whole being [is] Buddha nature."[36] Thus he eliminates the separation inherent in a subject possessing an object, as the whole string of characters, "All sentient beings' whole being Buddha nature," might be read as either one long subject or one full predicate. This elimination of conventional dualistic grammar is itself a skillful mode for demonstrating the nondualism between sentient beings and Buddha nature.

In further accord with LaFleur's view of the Lotus discourse, Dōgen specifically affirms "the complete reality of the world of concrete phenomena" in his discourse rhetoric as well as its content, and even when leaving the content itself seemingly absent, or at least not stated. In jōdō 49 in *Eihei Kōroku*, also given in 1241, Dōgen says, "This mountain monk has not lectured for the sake of the assembly for a long time. Why is this? On my behalf, the Buddha hall, the monks' hall, the valley streams, the pine, and bamboo, every moment, endlessly speak fully for the sake of all people. Have you all heard it or not? If you say you heard it, what did you hear? If you say you have not heard it, you do not keep the five precepts."[37] Here Dōgen rhetorically affirms the immanence of the Dharmic discourse as well as its content, right in the world of dharmas, or particulars, including streams, pines, bamboo, and temple buildings, which all themselves discourse on this Dharma. He also self-consciously uses this nonexplicit discourse of the Dharma and its immanence as a skillful means for challenging his monks in training to hear and express the Dharma more fully: "Have you all heard it or not?"

Dōgen's Use of the Fantastic

Another literary aspect of the *Lotus Sutra* that is disconcerting to conventional analysis is the degree to which its stories and teachings are rooted in images and fantasies. In his introduction to his book on Myōe (1173–1232), whose life and teaching were colorfully replete with the visionary, George Tanabe Jr. cites the centrality of visions to East Asian Buddhist experience, despite the focus of much of modern Buddhist studies on doctrine and philosophy: "The Buddhist tradition is as much a history of fantasy as it is a history of thought. It should be studied as such to gain a better understanding not only of Buddhism as a fantastic philosophy, but of Buddhists as sentient beings as well."[38]

Current scholars are beginning to explore the vital role of the fantastic and of imagery in Mahāyāna Buddhist teaching and lore. In his book, *Empty Vision: Metaphor and Visionary Imagery in Mahāyāna Buddhism*, David McMahan writes, "What Buddhist texts *say* about vision in a technical sense is not as important to this inquiry as how they *use* visual metaphors and imagery, and what philosophical, praxiological, rhetorical, and social significance these uses had in Mahāyāna literature and practice."[39] McMahan discusses the background of visual imagery in Indian Mahāyāna Buddhism, especially as it develops in the *Gaṇḍavyūha Sutra*, the final section of the vast *Avataṃsaka Sutra*. In chapter 5, we will see how McMahan's exploration of the use of visual metaphors and imagery suggest interrelationships between earth, space, and time that are helpful to understanding Dōgen's worldview.

In the context of Myōe studies, Tanabe's discussion of the fantastic might also more directly apply to the visions of the *Avataṃsaka Sutra*, which Myōe, as a Kegon monk, especially cherished. The *Avataṃsaka Sutra*, a highly psychedelic samādhi text, describes the activity of bodhisattvas in terms of evocative, lush imagery conducive to inspiring luminous visions of the exalted quality of mind and reality. But Tanabe's remarks also certainly pertain to the striking images and parables of the *Lotus Sutra*, about which he directly says, "The *Lotus Sutra* is less a work of memory and more a product of fantasy inspired with new visions derived internally." The *Lotus Sutra* thus calls for examination of the significance and function of its imagery as much as, if not more than, its philosophical positions. As Tanabe says:

> Visions are central to the East Asian Buddhist experience, but little has been done by way of research of them. . . . Mahāyāna Buddhism is, among many things it can be, a tradition of the mind's faculty for producing images in both waking life and sleep: a tradition, that

> is, of fantasy producing visions . . . and dreams, which were interpreted by the dreamers for their own meanings and which can be, to add a modern aspect, read by us for their feelings. It will be possible to gain a better understanding of Mahāyāna Buddhism as a vehicle not only of ideas and institutions but of human emotion as well only when studies of the fantastic end of the spectrum become more available.[40]

In this context, the *Lotus Sutra* parables and self-referential discourse style can be seen as the internal expression of vision, or fantasy, that expresses the human experience of Mahāyāna practice, more than its philosophical content. Even when, as may frequently be the case, such discourse is a literary device or artifice rather than directly inspired by literal meditative experiences, visions, or dreams, such literary framing serves to honor the skillful use of imagination and the visionary.

The *Lotus Sutra* itself includes a parable that uses a fantastic vision to demonstrate how fantastic visions themselves can function as skillful liberative modes. In chapter 7, a conjured or phantom city is described as a vision that serves as a metaphor for the teaching of nirvāṇa as cessation, which can provide a halfway oasis on the path to Mahāyāna universal liberation. Despite being a mere phantom, the vision of an oasis city acts as a necessary, beneficial encouragement for practitioners, who may be refreshed by temporarily imagining that they have achieved their goal. Similarly, *Lotus Sutra* parables themselves, even when they contain fantastic, dramatic, or ironic elements, also function as beneficial encouragements.

In another of the numerous examples in *Shōbōgenzō* of Dōgen using wordplay to invert conventional thinking, in "Within a Dream Expressing the Dream" ("Muchū Setsumu"), written in 1242, he extensively elaborates on his statement "All buddhas express the dream within a dream."[41] He thereby denies the supposedly lesser reality of the "dreams" of the transient phenomenal world and negates a Platonic exaltation of the absolute, which LaFleur describes as the antithesis of *Lotus Sutra* teaching. Instead, Dōgen proclaims the dream world of phenomena as exactly the realm of buddhas' activity: "Every dewdrop manifested in every realm is a dream. This dream is the glowing clarity of the hundred grasses. . . . Do not mistake them as merely dreamy." The liberative awakening of buddhas is itself described as a dream: "Without expressing dreams, there are no buddhas. Without being within a dream, buddhas do not emerge and turn the wondrous dharma wheel. This dharma wheel is no other than a buddha together with a buddha, and a dream expressed

within a dream. Simply expressing the dream within a dream is itself the buddhas and ancestors, the assembly of unsurpassable enlightenment."[42]

Dōgen is not frivolously indulging in mere paradox here, but follows the logic of the dream as necessarily the locus of awakening. As he says in his celebrated 1233 *Shōbōgenzō* essay, "Actualizing the Fundamental Point" ("Genjōkōan"), "Those who have great realization of delusion are buddhas."[43] What is worthy of study is not delusions or fantasies about enlightenment, but the reality of the causes and conditions of the realms of delusion and suffering. A similar logic is expressed in the *Lotus Sutra* dictum that buddhas manifest only due to the presence of suffering beings. Dōgen's positive view of dreams will be significant in his parables to be discussed later, two of which he frames as if they might have been dreams, whether or not they were his actual sleeping dreams.

Dōgen does not attend to literal dreams with anywhere near the same dedication as his contemporary, Myōe, as exemplified by Myōe's extraordinary, forty-year dream journal.[44] Along with Myōe, dreams and visionary discourse are also more emphasized than they are by Dōgen in the teachings of Keizan Jōkin (1264–1325), Dōgen's third-generation successor, who is revered as the second founder of Japanese Sōtō Zen. The central role of dream and vision for Keizan has been discussed and elaborated by Bernard Faure in *Visions of Power*. Keizan and his successors in the following few generations helped spread Sōtō Zen throughout rural Japan. One stereotype in Sōtō studies is the distinction between Keizan's use of the visionary, inspired by Esoteric teachings, and the supposedly more "pure" Zen of Dōgen. According to this stereotype, Dōgen emphasized zazen and a rational presentation of Buddha Dharma, untainted by the more colorful and melodramatic Mahāyāna and Esoteric teachings indulged in by Keizan.[45] However, Dōgen does indeed employ dreams and visions as skillful teaching tools. Although we may certainly note differences in emphasis and style between Dōgen and Keizan, Dōgen is in fundamental accord with the worldview of medieval Japan, including the Esoteric teachings of Shingon and Tendai that were the background for all Kamakura-period Buddhism. Dōgen's visionary context, including the impact of spirits, is perhaps most apparent in his interpretations and appropriations of the *Lotus Sutra* and in his own references to dreaming.

In "Within a Dream Expressing the Dream," Dōgen explicitly refers to the *Lotus Sutra* as a source for the role of dreams in his discourse style. He quotes a long passage that concludes the final verse in chapter 14 of the sutra, beginning with "All buddhas, with bodies of golden hue, splendidly adorned with a hundred auspicious marks, hear the Dharma and expound it for others. Such is the

fine dream that ever occurs." Dōgen interprets this passage as saying that the whole archetypal story of the Buddha occurs in a dream. His reading takes this passage out of its context in the sutra to emphasize that the Buddha is "made king," leaves the palace, awakens under the bodhi tree, and conducts his whole teaching career, all in a dream.[46] Thus this passage, just preceding the dramatic emergence of the underground bodhisattvas, is creatively interpreted by Dōgen to serve as foreshadowing for the revelation in chapter 16 of Buddha's inconceivable life span, in which the archetypal story of his birth, awakening, teaching, and death is more explicitly revealed as a skillful means to encourage beings.

After quoting this passage, Dōgen avers, "This dream of buddhas is not an analogy." In the original context of the *Lotus Sutra* text, this passage is merely describing the rewards of those who preach the Lotus, in this instance the reward being auspicious dreams.[47] But Dōgen uses his creative reading to validate, or at least exemplify, his teaching that the dream state of the conditioned phenomenal world is exactly the arena for awakening. But he is furthermore claiming the dream mentioned by the *Lotus Sutra* as a model for a skillful discourse mode that has recourse to the visionary as a tool for liberation. As in the *Lotus Sutra*'s self-reflexive discourse style, the parable expression is itself a skillful mode of reality for Dōgen, not separate from concrete phenomena. Dōgen continues, "People in the past and present mistakenly think that, thanks to the power of expounding 'this foremost dharma,' mere night dreams may become like this dream of buddhas. Thinking like this, one has not yet clarified the Buddha's discourse. Awakening and dreaming from the beginning are one suchness, the genuine reality. The buddha-dharma, even if it were an analogy, is the genuine reality."[48] For Dōgen, the particular events of this dream world are the reality, and also the skillful discourse, of the awakening of buddhas.

Dōgen's Parables

The essays of Dōgen's *Shōbōgenzō*, such as "Within a Dream Expressing the Dream," are sometimes philosophical and elaborative of traditional Buddhist or Zen doctrines and are addressed to a general audience of his contemporaries. In *Eihei Kōroku*, by contrast, Dōgen is directly addressing his small cadre of monk disciples at Eiheiji, stretching for means to encourage and develop their practice. In this work, the primary available source for his mature teachings, as well as occasionally revealing humor or feelings such as sadness and regret, he at times offers his own parables, often using fantastic, playful

imagery, sometimes expressed as if in dreams. Briefly considering a few examples of Dōgen's own use of the fantastic is appropriate background for exploring his interpretations of the apparently fantastic emergence of the bodhisattvas and the revelation of Buddha's life span.

In the following three parables from *Eihei Kōroku* jōdōs, Dōgen's appropriation of Lotus and Mahāyāna visions is evidenced through the allusions to Mahāyāna rhetoric or figures in each of them. In *Eihei Kōroku* jōdō number 229, given in 1247, Dōgen directly parodies the rhetoric of Mahāyāna sutras:

> The millions of billions of transformation bodies [of buddhas] abide throughout a monk's staff, carry water and gather firewood to make offerings to buddhas as numerous as there are sitting cushions, and, on the tip of a whisk, simultaneously all attain unsurpassed complete perfect enlightenment. They are all equally named Broken Wooden Ladle Tathāgata, Worthy of Offerings, Omniscient, Foot of Bright Practice, Well Gone One, World Liberator, Supreme One, Strong Controlling Person, Teacher of Humans and Heavenly Beings, World-Honored Buddha. The Country [of this Buddha] is named Clump of Soil; the kalpa [age] is named Fist. The duration of the True Dharma Age and Semblance Dharma Age are both twelve hours, and the buddha's longevity is that of a dried turd from three thousand great thousands of worlds. Do you all understand?
>
> If you state your understanding you are making mistake after mistake. If you say you do not understand, even the five precepts are not maintained.[49]

Dōgen plays with words here, replacing the conventional sutra rhetoric for a buddha abiding throughout kalpas with his abiding throughout a monk's staff. Instead of making offerings to buddhas as numerous as the proverbial grains of sand in the Ganges River, Dōgen substitutes buddhas as numerous as sitting cushions. Instead of the buddha sitting under the bodhi tree as he attains enlightenment, Dōgen has him sitting on top of a whisk. Dōgen then applies the standard ten epithets for a buddha, starting with "Tathāgata," to a new buddha invented here by Dōgen, named Broken Wooden Ladle. Given Dōgen's use of common, everyday monastic implements, including even a broken ladle, this buddha might be seen as referring to all of the humble monks that Dōgen is addressing at Eiheiji. Continuing with his parody of conventional Mahāyāna sutra rhetoric, Dōgen designates the buddha land of this fabulous new buddha as "Clump of Soil," his kalpa as "Fist," and his longevity as that of a dried turd.

Dōgen seems to mock the standard Mahāyāna sutra rhetoric, iconoclastically mimicking a formula for describing buddhas used often in the *Lotus Sutra*, for example in chapters 8 and 9 on the predictions of future buddhahood of the five hundred disciples, and of learners and adepts.[50] However, he actually is affirming his view of the *Lotus Sutra*, as originally interpreted by Saichō and expressed by LaFleur, which validates the world of concrete phenomena as expressive of the essence of awakening. The new buddha is called Broken Wooden Ladle in celebration of a humble implement, to which Dōgen frequently refers in highly exalted terms. For example, in jōdō 204 in 1246 he says, "If you really know it, the temple pillars confirm that, and the wooden ladles study together with you." Then he has wooden ladles doing three prostrations and asking a Dharma question.[51] Similarly revered in jōdō 229 are the practice paraphernalia of sitting cushions, a monk's staff, and a teacher's whisk. But in celebrating the humble particulars, Dōgen also emphasizes their ephemerality, as he says that the True and Semblance Dharma Ages of Broken Wooden Ladle Buddha each endure merely twelve hours. Although an intact wooden ladle is a useful implement, here the Buddha is named Broken Wooden Ladle, further emphasizing transience and recalling the Zen phrase "The bottom of a bucket broken out," which signifies the letting go of attachments in awakening experiences.

Dōgen's challenge to his monks at the end of the jōdō echoes the prominent Chan Dharma combat rhetoric style of kōan anthologies such as the *Hekiganroku* (*Blue Cliff Record*). However, his statement "If you state your understanding you are making mistake after mistake" might also be seen as a rationale for the whole *Lotus Sutra* self-referential strategy of not explicitly stating the content of the Dharma being celebrated and proclaimed. Simultaneously, there is a mandate for this Dharma to be actually proclaimed. "If you say you do not understand, even the five precepts are not maintained" implies the ethical responsibility not to deny whatever is realized, despite its ephemerality. This may be seen as echoing the frequent theme in the *Lotus Sutra* of the responsibility of Śākyamuni's disciples to maintain the Lotus Dharma in the future. Again, whether Dōgen's rhetoric here borrows more from Chan tradition or more from the indirect modes of the *Lotus Sutra* is not the issue. The fact that he uses this style to mimic *Lotus Sutra* rhetoric, however, does indicate that in this jōdō Dōgen is concerned and aware of *Lotus Sutra* discourse style and of appropriating it rhetorically, at least in part.

In the following two examples, Dōgen provides fantastic parables that seem to be framed as dreams when he describes them as happening "last night." Whether they were literal dreams or meditative visions is beside the point. As

Bernard Faure says, "For Buddhists there is no clear distinction between dreams that come during sleep and visions achieved in a waking state, or more precisely during meditation, in a state (*samādhi*) that, like trance, is often defined as being 'neither sleeping nor waking.' "[52] Whether realized in sleep or samādhi, or merely used intentionally as literary devices invoking the visionary qualities of samādhi, these visions are used to "express the dream within the dream," that is, to reveal awakening amid the phenomenal. In his Enlightenment Day jōdō, number 88, in 1241, Dōgen says:

> Two thousand years later, we are the descendants [of Śākyamuni]. Two thousand years ago, he was our ancestral father. He is muddy and wet from following and chasing after the waves. It can be described like this, but also there is the principle of the Way [that we must] make one mistake after another. What is this like? Whether Buddha is present or not present, I trust he is right under our feet. Face after face is Buddha's face; fulfillment after fulfillment is Buddha's fulfillment.
>
> Last night, this mountain monk [Dōgen] unintentionally stepped on a dried turd and it jumped up and covered heaven and earth. This mountain monk unintentionally stepped on it again, and it introduced itself, saying, "My name is Śākyamuni." Then, this mountain monk unintentionally stepped on his chest, and immediately he went and sat on the vajra seat, saw the morning star, bit through the traps and snares of conditioned birth, and cast away his old nest from the past. Without waiting for anyone to peck at his shell from outside, he received the thirty-two characteristics common to all buddhas, and together with this mountain monk, composed the following four line verse:
>
> Stumbling I stepped on his chest and his backbone snapped,
> Mountains and rivers swirling around, the dawn wind blew.
> Penetrating seven and accomplishing eight,
> bones piercing the heavens,
> His face attained a sheet of golden skin.[53]

In this jōdō Dōgen describes a dreamlike fantasy in which he accidentally steps on a piece of shit, and in accord with Yunmen's description of Buddha often cited by Dōgen, it jumps up and declares itself to be Śākyamuni. This vision increases the apparent disrespect for Buddha in Yunmen's utterance, as Dōgen again steps on his chest (albeit again accidentally), even after the dried shit identifies himself as Śākyamuni Buddha. But Dōgen uses this scatological

vision not to degrade, but to further celebrate Buddha, by declaring that upon being stepped on, "He went and sat on the vajra seat, saw the morning star, bit through the traps and snares of conditioned birth, and cast away his old nest from the past."

Here Dōgen skillfully proclaims and celebrates, nonexplicitly, the major revelation of the *Lotus Sutra* of the Buddha's life span enduring over inconceivable ages, and that his archetypal story of his home-leaving and awakening is demonstrated simply as a skillful mode. The effect of this dream parable of Dōgen is to reinforce the story in chapter 16 by describing Buddha and his awakening process as still omnipresent, "last night" right at Eiheiji, and even in excrement.

Dōgen's dream story also echoes the *Lotus Sutra*, chapter 4, parable of the prodigal son, who can realize his fundamental endowment only after years of shoveling manure in his father's field. As Dōgen says in the introduction to his parable, even Śākyamuni "is muddy and wet from following and chasing after the waves." Dōgen's further introductory statement, "Whether Buddha is present or not present, I trust he is right under our feet," echoes the *Lotus Sutra* parable about the ragged beggar unknowingly having the Dharma jewel sewn within his robe. It further suggests the image in chapter 15 of myriad bodhisattvas suddenly springing forth from beneath the ground "under our feet," which, as we will see, represents for Dōgen the omnipresence of the bodhisattva potential in the ground of concrete particulars.

Having venerated Śākyamuni Buddha via seeming desecration in this last jōdō parable, in *Eihei Kōroku* jōdō number 123, given in 1243, Dōgen describes another dream vision, this one seeming to poke fun at Avalokiteśvara, the bodhisattva of compassion.

> One sheet of dull stubbornness is three inches thick. Three lengths of upside-downness is five feet long. Last night, this mountain monk [Dōgen] struck the empty sky with a single blow. My fist didn't hurt, but the empty sky knew pain. A number of sesame cakes appeared and rushed to become the faces and eyes of the great earth.
>
> Suddenly a person came to this mountain monk and said, "I want to buy the sesame cakes."
>
> This mountain monk said to him, "Who are you?"
>
> The person replied to this mountain monk, "I am Avalokiteśvara Bodhisattva. My family name is Zhang, and my personal name is Li."
>
> This mountain monk said to him, "Did you bring any money?"
>
> He said, "I came without any money."

> I asked him, "If you didn't bring money, can you buy them or not?"
>
> He didn't answer, but just said, "I want to buy them, I really do."
>
> Do you totally, thoroughly understand the meaning of this?
>
> *After a pause [Dōgen] said*: When Avalokiteśvara Bodhisattva makes an appearance, mountains and rivers on the great earth are not dead ashes. You should always remember that in the third month the partridges sing and the flowers open.[54]

In the mock creation myth in the introduction to this jōdō, Dōgen punches out the empty sky. Then, with bravado akin to such classic Chan masters of fisticuffs as Linji Yixuan or Deshan Xuanjian (780–865; Tokusan Senkan in Japanese), Dōgen declares that his fist didn't hurt, but the empty sky "knew pain." Like the skillful fists of Linji or Deshan, with their constructive impact on their monk trainees, Dōgen's fist brings forth a cascade of sesame cakes, which in turn shower down as thousands of faces and eyes.

The several references to the kōan lexicon by Dōgen in this jōdō include case 78 of the *Shōyōroku* (*Book of Serenity*) anthology. When asked by a monk about talk that transcends buddhas and ancestors, Yunmen answers, "Sesame cakes." In case 82 of the *Shōyōroku*, the association of Yunmen with sesame cakes continues when he says, "The Bodhisattva Avalokiteśvara brings money to buy a sesame cake: when he lowers his hand, it turns out to be a jelly-doughnut."[55] This story must have inspired Dōgen's vision of Avalokiteśvara striving to purchase sesame cakes. But Dōgen envisions the sesame cakes as transformed into dynamically active eyes and faces rather than jelly doughnuts (in East Asia, filled with sweet bean paste), which are still mere commodities, even if richer than sesame cakes.

As Dōgen's parable in jōdō 123 unfolds in dreamlike narrative, someone shows up who wants to buy the sesame cakes (transformed into faces and eyes). When Dōgen inquires, the person identifies himself as Avalokiteśvara, just as the piece of shit in the previously discussed dream parable identifies himself as Śākyamuni. Presumably Avalokiteśvara is trying to acquire from Dōgen the eleven faces and thousand eyes for his hands, as depicted in one of the bodhisattva's foremost iconographic forms.[56] With these multiple perspectives, the bodhisattva of compassion can fulfill the skillful means that he is known for, as seen in his diversity of forms in chapter 25 of the *Lotus Sutra*.

When Avalokiteśvara further identifies himself by the very common Chinese names Zhang and Li, this represents him as an ordinary person. Even in a dream (or a literary discourse that he frames as visionary or dreamlike), Dōgen is thereby implicitly affirming practice in the mundane world and

the immanent presence of compassion. In "Within a Dream Expressing the Dream," written the year before the parable in jōdō 123, Dōgen declares, "The expression of the dream within the dream is the thousand hands and eyes of Avalokiteśvara that function by many means."[57] Here he explicitly denotes the discourse mode, the expressive style itself, as an aspect or example of Avalokiteśvara's skillful means.

Dōgen's parable ends with Avalokiteśvara expressing his commitment and determination to obtain the eyes and faces (formerly sesame cakes) with which to proceed with his work of compassion, whether or not he has any money. In his own concluding commentary, Dōgen adds, "When Avalokiteśvara Bodhisattva makes an appearance, mountains and rivers on the great earth are not dead ashes." Here Dōgen emphasizes the dynamic, liberating quality of the world of concrete phenomena. For Dōgen, the whole world and its components, even the dreams within a dream, are the vital functioning of awakening, like the conjured city in the *Lotus Sutra* parable, assisting those on the path. Dōgen's jōdō concludes with a further affirmation of the enlightening potency of the phenomenal world: "You should always remember that in the third month the partridges sing and the flowers open." Here the emergence of vitality in spring, and also its very invocation, functions skillfully as an encouraging metaphor for the enduring potential of awakening in his disciple audience.

The parables in the *Lotus Sutra* may lack Dōgen's humorous irony and visionary whimsy. But in accord with LaFleur's account of the function of those parables, Dōgen uses his dream parables similarly as skillful modes with which to encourage his monks' engagement with and affirmation of "the complete reality of the world of concrete phenomena in spite of the fact that they are impermanent."

This chapter has explored primary Mahāyāna Buddhist approaches to understanding and interpreting texts based on principles of skillful means, potentialities of buddha nature, and subtly effective proclamation of teachings. These provide a context from which to consider all Mahāyāna teachings. We have also seen how the modern hermeneutical perspectives of Paul Ricoeur encourage a flexible field of play with language to evoke spiritual meaning. Dōgen freely employs such wordplay. His expressive style is in deep accord with, and is creatively indebted to, the self-reflexive, imagistic *Lotus Sutra*.

Now we turn to the content of the central *Lotus Sutra* story of the emerging underground bodhisattvas and the Buddha's inconceivable life span, first in the context of the views of selected East Asian Buddhist teachers, and then from Dōgen himself.

3

Selected East Asian Interpretations of the Story

In this chapter a sampling of East Asian views of the *Lotus Sutra* and, where possible, especially comments on the story of the underground bodhisattvas' emergence from the earth and the Buddha's inconceivable life span will be presented to display themes highlighted by other East Asian Buddhist thinkers besides Dōgen. This selection of historical Chinese and Japanese figures who have commented on the story includes Daosheng, Zhiyi, and Zhanran from China before Dōgen. Special attention is given to responses from Dōgen's contemporaries in or around Kamakura-period Japan, featuring Saigyō, Myōe, and Nichiren. From later prominent Japanese Zen figures who give special attention to the *Lotus Sutra* I include Hakuin and Ryōkan, and from modern Japanese Zen, Shunryū Suzuki.

Daosheng Digging through the Ground and the Times

Daosheng (ca. 360–434; Dōshō in Japanese) is one of the great figures in early Chinese Buddhism. Already a noted lecturer on a variety of Buddhist teachings, around 405 Daosheng spent a couple years studying with Kumārajīva while the latter was translating the *Lotus Sutra*. Although Daosheng also wrote commentaries on the *Vimalakīrti-nirdeśa Sūtra*, the *Aṣṭasāhasrika-prajñāpāramitā Sūtra*, and the *Mahāparinirvāṇa Sūtra*, his only complete extant work is his

full commentary on the *Lotus Sutra*, written near the end of his career, in 432, and which was the first commentary on the sutra written in Chinese.[1]

Daosheng also contributed to the development of Chinese buddha nature teaching. He denied the traditional Yogācāra theory that held there were some beings, called *icchantika*, who had no buddha nature at all and were incapable of ever awakening. Around 428 he insisted that all beings were endowed with the universally applicable buddha nature, and that there were no icchantikas. As a result of this heresy, Daosheng was temporarily expelled from the Buddhist community. Fortunately for him, within a couple of years the complete translation of the *Mahāparinirvāṇa Sūtra* done in 421 by Dharmakṣema (385–433) arrived in the capital and completely vindicated his position.[2]

Daosheng's exegesis of the *Lotus Sutra* text is one of the most systematic of any to be considered herein, commenting on the text chapter by chapter, so I will discuss only selected relevant points in his commentary on the bodhisattvas emerging from the ground. Daosheng says at the beginning of the chapter that this story introduces the effect of the practice portion of the sutra, just as the first chapter had introduced the cause section. He says that Śākyamuni Buddha's call for protectors of the *Lotus Sutra* was because "the Dharma by which living beings emerge from delusion and are led to Buddhahood and nirvāṇa is designed to extinguish itself completely; they (beings) must volunteer to protect it. Hence, the words of exhortation, so that they may strengthen their will to protect it. However, living beings all are endowed with (the faculty of) great enlightenment; all are without exception potential bodhisattvas. In this respect there is no time when the sutra is not protected."[3] So Daosheng sees the call for protectors of the sutra as a skillful means, like the inconceivable life span itself, aimed at helping bodhisattva practitioners "strengthen their will." And yet here he again asserts that all are endowed with awakening capacity. Even before arriving at the revelation of the inconceivable duration of the Buddha, he says that because of this bodhisattva capacity, and the emerging bodhisattvas, "there is no time when the sutra is not protected."

Daosheng's view of this earth from which the bodhisattvas emerge shares both a striking difference from and an insightful similarity to Dōgen's view. Daosheng first makes a strong negative interpretation of the earth as an image in this story: "The *earth* refers to the bonds and the instigators of depravities. And the living being's endowment for enlightenment lies under these instigators of depravities." He sees the earth as representing the conditioned obstructions and attachments that awakening needs to break through. He adds that "living beings inherently possess an endowment for enlightenment, and it cannot remain concealed; they are bound to break the earth of defilement

and emerge to safeguard the Dharma."[4] This interpretation, based on a negative view of the earth as defiled, fits the common, traditional Buddhist metaphor of the world's "dusts" as objects of desire that block clear awareness.

But Daosheng adds another note, which we will see Dōgen developing. He says that the "open space" under this Sahā world-sphere, in which the bodhisattvas had been abiding, represents the *li* (principle) of emptiness, "the state of *li* devoid of instigators."[5] Thus Daosheng somewhat anticipates an aspect of the nature of these underground bodhisattvas as informed by the openness of space and earth, a metaphoric aspect of openness and space that we will explore more with Dōgen.

In his comments on the chapter about the life span of Buddha, Daosheng states, "The profound mirror [representing the awakened mind] is void and clear, it is outside the realm of phenomena." Thereby he notes that although "any being with a distinct form" is subject to some life span, "there is no way that the Sage can be in that category." Thus he indicates the paradoxical nature of designating any life span for the Buddha, who is seen by Daosheng as both manifested in phenomenal form and also beyond form. But he notes that the "life-span is none other than that which prompted the Buddhas [to achieve] spiritual insight in the earlier chapters and is none other than the ultimate effect." This is a significant and suggestive viewpoint, as Daosheng suggests that this long-lived Śākyamuni, or the revelation of his life span, which is the fruit of practice, is also itself that which inspires the cause of practice in the earlier half of the *Lotus Sutra*. But this might also suggest that the limitation of a life span, and the fact of mortality, is itself a spur to practice. Although Daosheng does not elaborate, he does affirm the Buddha's move toward participation in the world of the living and even states that buddhas "tend to have an affinity for life and distaste for death."[6] Thus the long-lived Buddha has precedence over the one who seems to acquire enlightenment merely in this historical life.

In affirming Śākyamuni with the long life span, Daosheng also upholds all modes of the Buddha, and does so in terms of a transcendent and all-encompassing view of time, perhaps implying an aspect of the worldview of time that Dōgen will elaborate. Daosheng refers also to time when he says that Buddha "is one throughout the past and present; the past also is the present, and vice versa. There is no time when he is not existent. There is no place where he is not present. If there are times when something is not existent and there are places when something is not present, it applies only to beings, but not to the Sage." Buddha's extended presence seems to change time itself for Daosheng, as past and present interfuse. But while perhaps positing an

omnipresent, multidirectional realm of time for Buddha, he seems to be indicating a separate temporal reality for sentient beings, apart from that of the Buddha. But then he gives the new view of time precedence for all who accept the sutra's revelation of Buddha's life span as "He who has seen Reality never again sees what is not real."[7] Thus Daosheng posits a new, more reliable temporal reality implied by Śākyamuni's omnipresence.

Zhiyi Integrating the Buddha Bodies

Tiantai Zhiyi (538–597; Tendai Chigi in Japanese), founder of the Chinese Tiantai school, is a seminal giant of Chinese Buddhism who integrated the diversity of Indian Buddhist teachings that had reached China to produce a coherent Chinese synthesis. In his panjiao system for organizing and categorizing the different scriptures, Zhiyi set the *Lotus Sutra* as preeminent. He speaks of the long-lived Buddha of the *Lotus Sutra* in terms of this Buddha's relationship to the cause and effect sections of the sutra, which were defined by Zhiyi as being demarcated by this story.

Zhiyi designates both a "true" aspect and a "tentative" aspect for the cause and effect parts of the sutra. For Zhiyi the true cause is that the Buddha's bodhisattva activity has no beginning, and the true effect is that his buddhahood has no beginning. For this Buddha's tentative cause he assesses his listener's inclinations and tells them the familiar story of his leaving home, attaining the way, and so on. In the tentative effect aspect the Buddha remains in this world eternally, relating different things to different people aimed at bringing all beings to the enlightenment he embodies.[8] In this way Zhiyi seeks to clarify different perspectives on the *Lotus Sutra* Śākyamuni.

Zhiyi states in his teaching on the "Ten Degrees of Pervasive Teachings" that in the tenth stage, the "Buddha Ground," bodhisattvas of sharp faculties see a Buddha who, "while also in human form, is not confined to the specific career of Śākyamuni but appears and disappears freely according to the presence or absence of beings ripe for salvation."[9] This Buddha may not always be literally present for Zhiyi, yet he is ultimately always available when he can aid beings in need.

Zhiyi apparently instigated a later interpretation for the sutra passage revealing the Buddha's life span that describes this Buddha as eternal. However, as Jacqueline Stone points out in *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Japanese Buddhism*, "A literal reading of this passage suggests that the original realization, however inconceivably long ago, did indeed take place at a specific point in time, and thus must be said to have a beginning. Never-

theless, this 'original Buddha' of the 'Fathoming the Lifespan' chapter lent himself more readily than did the traditional, historical Śākyamuni to identification with the beginningless Dharma body."[10] So, according to the sutra itself, this Buddha is not literally infinite or eternal.

Just as the sutra clearly indicates that the long-lived Buddha has a finite, if inconceivably long life, Zhiyi did not see the *Lotus Sutra* Buddha as virtually eternal. He initiated analysis of this Buddha in terms of the teaching of the three bodies of buddha, even though the three bodies (*trikāya*) teaching is not mentioned in the sutra itself. These three bodies are the historically manifested transformation body (*nirmāṇakāya*), the blissful recompense body (*saṃbhoghakāya*), and the ultimate truth or reality body (*dharmakāya*). Zhiyi saw the three as integrated in the *Lotus Sutra*, as he "interpreted Śākyamuni Buddha of the 'Fathoming the Lifespan' chapter as embodying all three bodies in one."[11]

Whereas the historically manifested body is affected by causality and the conditions of the world, for Zhiyi the Dharma body is unchangeable, revealing of perfect suchness beyond distinctions. "Since the dharma body is in accord with the principle of suchness, both its nature and appearance are eternally as they are, whether it is manifested or not as a Buddha; therefore it is not relevant whether it is measurable or not, that is, whether it has duration or not." From the perspective of the Dharma body at least, the *Lotus Sutra* Buddha both incorporates and transcends each of the three bodies. For Zhiyi, "the three bodies are both permanent and impermanent, and are all three inherent in the Buddha of the Lotus Sutra: 'One body is three bodies; it is not one, it is not different.'"[12] Zhiyi "interpreted these three bodies as the attributes of a single, original Buddha, the Śākyamuni of the sixteenth chapter of the *Lotus Sutra*, enlightened since countless dust-particle kalpas ago. For Chih-i [Wade-Giles transliteration of Zhiyi], the unity of the three was mediated by the recompense body, which he saw as central."[13]

Zhiyi did not dissolve these three bodies or aspects of Buddha into one, but uses the three to celebrate nuances of the Buddha revealed in chapter 16. His emphasis on the recompense body expresses the important role of actual practice, with "buddhahood as a process, which has by definition a location in time and place." We can see this body as most accurately conveying the inconceivable long-lived Buddha described in the sutra itself. The recompense body "represents a Buddha who has a beginning, and thus is finite before attaining enlightenment, but who becomes immeasurable, infinite, after his awakening. It exemplifies a Buddha who encompasses in himself both historical existence and universal principle: not an absolute Tathāgata who assumes for some time a phenomenal form and then goes back to his true nature, but

a Tathāgata who is, at the same time, his true nature and his temporal manifestation."[14] But while Zhiyi stresses this recompense body, he does so to show how the *Lotus Sutra* Buddha incorporates all aspects of buddhas.

Zhiyi's identification of the *Lotus Sutra* Śākyamuni with all three bodies of Buddha was retained in Chinese Tiantai as well as by Saichō (767–822), founder of the Japanese Tendai school in which Dōgen initially trained. After Saichō, medieval Tendai "redefined Śākyamuni of the *Lotus Sutra*, not as an individual person who had once cultivated bodhisattva practice and achieved Buddhahood, but as an originally inherent Buddha, without beginning or end." This redefinition of the Buddha "would help give rise to medieval understandings of the *Lotus Sutra* as a teaching of original enlightenment,"[15] a teaching that was developing in Tendai circles in Dōgen's time. Dōgen frequently criticized these original enlightenment teachings inasmuch as they were taken to imply that practice was unnecessary, even as he also criticized acquired enlightenment approaches that posited enlightenment as a commodity or experience that could be obtained.

Zhanran Informing Phenomena with Buddha Nature

After Zhiyi, the prominent Chinese Tiantai sixth ancestor Zhanran (711–782; Tannen in Japanese) articulated the teaching potential of grasses, trees, and other insentient beings. As Robert Sharf notes, Zhanran uses the *Lotus Sutra* assembly, including the bodhisattvas emerging from underground, to express a "poetic vision of the phenomenal world as the very locus of awakening." For Zhanran, "the very colors and smells of the world around us constitute the Assembly of the Lotus; they are the immediate and undefiled expression of buddhahood."[16] Contrary to Daosheng's view of the earth as "instigator of depravities," Zhanran affirms the earth from which the bodhisattvas emerge as the undefiled expression of awakening.

This affirmation reflects in part Zhanran's interest in Huayan cosmology, with its vision of the world as a luminous ground of interconnectedness and with the mutual nonobstruction of particulars. Zhanran cited the Huayan ancestor Fazang's dynamic view of "suchness according with conditions" to support his own teaching of the Buddha nature of insentient beings, and was the first to connect "the co-arising of suchness and the essential completeness of Buddha nature."[17] Zhanran's perspective on the *Lotus Sutra*, influenced by Huayan, was later adopted by Saichō, who had been ordained in Kegon (the Japanese Huayan school) and studied Huayan texts before he went to study Tiantai in China.[18]

Zhanran also prominently cites the *Mahāparinirvāṇa Sūtra* to champion the universality of buddha nature based on the ultimate nonduality of cause and effect and of the illusion of self and other. For example, he references this sutra after saying, "From the beginningless beginning sentient beings have thought in terms of 'self' and the 'objects of self,' and yet they will never give voice to the universality [of buddha nature] if they continue to so categorize." But in the Tiantai sutra classification system panjiao, the *Mahāparinirvā Sūtra* and the *Lotus Sutra* are grouped together as the highest teaching.[19] So Zhanran's appreciation of the *Mahāparinirvā Sūtra* is not in conflict, but is complementary to Tiantai views of the *Lotus Sutra*. Zhanran's lively view of the *Lotus Sutra* and its world was continued in Saichō's Japanese Tendai school, and certainly would have been assumed by Dōgen and other Tendai monks.

In his 782 treatise "The Diamond Scalpel" ("Jinbei Lun"), Zhanran expounds on the universality of buddha nature. He cites the story in chapters 15 and 16 of the *Lotus Sutra* to support the inclusiveness and truth of the One Vehicle, "that Śākyamuni treats all equally and without bias," stating that the Buddha's previous lives express this and "the eternity of his life-span simply proves this." Echoing the sutra, Zhanran sees the duration of the inconceivable life span as providing the diversity of skillful means to lead all into the one great vehicle. He then also celebrates the bodhisattvas emerging from underground as giving "their lives to increase the path to enlightenment. First they develop the mind [of enlightenment] and, in the end, they will occupy a [vacant] place. How can there be another way by which we all inherit this?"[20] Zhanran sees the underground bodhisattvas and the omnipresent Śākyamuni of the *Lotus Sutra* as supporting the single great cause in the One Vehicle, elaborated in chapter 2 of the sutra, to help lead all beings onto the path.[21]

Zhanran especially champions the buddha nature of the land itself, serving as a precursor to Dōgen's worldview. He maintains that the universal buddha nature "is complete within the bodies of all Buddhas, and one body [completely contains] all bodies. In like fashion, [it is complete within] the response-lands of all Buddhas; one land [completely contains] all lands. Bodies and lands being identical, what can be said about bodies can be said about lands. . . . [This] is another way of saying that you possess [buddha] nature."[22] We will see how Dōgen uses the imagery of the emerging bodhisattvas to elaborate this view of the ground itself as imbued with buddha nature.

In the medieval Japanese Tendai discourse contemporary with Dōgen, as mentioned previously, discussions developed derived from Zhiyi in which the long-lived Śākyamuni of the *Lotus Sutra* was described as literally eternal. But as Jacqueline Stone and Japanese scholars such as Genryū Kagamishima and

Rosan Ikeda suggest, Dōgen's responses to the nature of the *Lotus Sutra* Buddha owe more to Zhiyi and Zhanran than either to medieval Tendai or to Chinese Chan roots.[23] As Lucia Dolce notes, medieval Japanese Tendai regarded "the Śākyamuni of the far distant past as a threefold body enlightened as it is, and the innumerable *kalpas* of his far distant past . . . as a metaphor, an example of conventional explanation. The danger of such a reading of the scripture would be to overlook the importance of practice as the means through which Buddhahood is attained, which is a central issue in the sutra."[24] Concern with the danger of neglecting practice was especially significant in the work of Dōgen, who railed against *hongaku shisō* (original enlightenment) theory not only in Tendai, but as it had affected attitudes toward practice as unnecessary in the Daruma school previously followed by many of Dōgen's leading disciples.

The *Lotus Sutra* in Chinese Chan

The Chinese Chan classic recorded sayings, lamp transmission anthologies, and formal kōan collections contain some passing references to the *Lotus Sutra*, as well as other Mahāyāna sutras, but no references that I have been able to find to the story in chapters 15 and 16 that is this work's primary concern. A full survey and analysis of *Lotus Sutra* references in the Chinese Chan literature is far beyond the scope of this work, but there were a few Chan masters who were especially noted for dedication to the *Lotus Sutra*.

A prominent early Chan figure who appreciated the *Lotus Sutra* was the founder of the "Oxhead" school in northern China, Niutou Fayong (594–657; Gozu Hōyū in Japanese). It is said that Niutou once lectured for seven days in midwinter on the *Lotus Sutra* and two stalks of golden hibiscus flowers emerged from the snow-covered ground, blooming only until his lectures ended.[25] But the various stories of Niutou's magical powers are commonly used in the later Chan tradition to criticize him for lack of true understanding.[26]

Other examples of Chan masters who studied the *Lotus Sutra* are Fengxue Yanzhao (893–973; Fuketsu Enshō in Japanese) and his successor Shoushan Xingnian (926–993; Shusan Shōnen in Japanese), three and four generations after Linji in the Linji (Rinzai) lineage.[27] Another is Yongming Yenshou (904–975; Yōmyō Ensho in Japanese) of the Fayan lineage, noted for his voluminous *True Source Mirror Collection*.[28] Fatong (n.d.; Buttsū in Japanese), a twelfth-century nun in the Caodong (Sōtō) lineage and a successor of Shimen Yuanyi (1053–1137; Sekimon Gen'eki in Japanese), is another example.[29] But these Chan teachers seem to be exceptions to the rule, especially mentioned

among Chan figures for their unusual focused study of the *Lotus Sutra*. More often, Chan figures explicitly rejected the Mahāyāna sutras as not the true "doctrine that has been separately transmitted outside the scriptural teachings," a popular Chan slogan.[30]

Dōgen had extraordinary mastery of the Chinese Chan/Zen kōan lexicon, which he cites prolifically and skillfully throughout his writings. It can readily be noted, historically, that Dōgen himself introduced the massive kōan literature into Japan, even while expanding and elaborating on kōan practice methodologies.[31] But the worldview of space and time that will be revealed in his citations to the *Lotus Sutra* story resonates more with early Chinese Mahāyāna sources, which are not as direct a factor in Chan kōan lore. The point is that, despite his dedicated introduction of the Chan kōan literature to Japan, Dōgen's ongoing appreciation and citations of the *Lotus Sutra* occur independent of, and not derived from, this kōan literature. His references to the *Lotus Sutra* reveal the depths of his commitment to the Mahāyāna vision that predates Chan, especially as expressed in the *Lotus Sutra* itself.

I now turn to several other Japanese figures roughly contemporary with Dōgen, beginning with the famed poet Saigyō from the century before Dōgen.

Saigyō and the Moon over Vulture Peak

Saigyō (1118–1190) is highly respected as a late Heian-period poet-monk who wandered throughout Japan writing *waka* poems (traditionally five lines with a 5/7/5/7/7 syllable scheme), many about gazing at the moon. Saigyō helped develop the profound medieval Japanese aesthetics of *yūgen*, a subtle response to the poignancy of impermanence. William LaFleur sees yūgen and its associated aesthetic as a direct result of the impact of the *Lotus Sutra* in Japan.[32] Saigyō became a great influence and example for many other noted Japanese literary figures, including the famed seventeenth-century haiku poet Bashō.

But Saigyō was also a monk, and likely saw his poetry as a form of religious devotion. There is a perhaps apocryphal story, recounted long after Saigyō's death, about Myōe's strict master Mongaku. Though he had never met Saigyō, Mongaku severely criticized him for his focus on aesthetic activities and consequent neglect of practice. But when Saigyō came and participated in a ceremony at Mongaku's temple, Mongaku was moved by Saigyō's sincerity and treated him with great courtesy.[33]

One of Saigyō's poems directly concerns chapter 16. It is entitled "On That Chapter of the *Lotus Sutra* Called 'Duration of the Life of the Tathāgata.'" Here is William LaFleur's translation of the poem:

Those who view the moon
Over Vulture Peak as one
Now sunk below
The horizon . . . are men whose minds
Confused, hold the real darkness.[34]

In this poem, Saigyō's rejection of the fatalistic pessimism and gloom of the mappō theories of this period in Japan seems to be inspired by the promise of Śākyamuni Buddha's long life and remaining presence. Saigyō is thus an example of someone for whom the *Lotus Sutra*'s teaching about the Buddha's longevity is a comfort and great encouragement. And he is willing to assert and maintain the Lotus teaching in his time.

Although noted for his poetic expressions of impermanence, Saigyō faithfully sees the Buddha's teaching remaining amid the present circumstances. In another example, at the Ise Shrine, Saigyō wrote:

Over Vulture Peak
There in Buddha's time and place:
A bedazzling moon,
Here softly filtered into
Tsukiyomi sacred shrine.[35]

Even in his wanderings throughout Japan, Saigyō still beheld the *Lotus Sutra* moon and Śākyamuni's presence.

For the poet Saigyō, the story in chapter 16 seems to have provided comfort and the faith that in some sense the Buddha and his awakening teaching and support was still present in the world, if only in the ephemeral beauty of the moon shining over the mountains. Saigyō's response would be an appropriate exemplification of those devotees who the sutra says will witness the Buddha, even after his supposed passing into nirvāṇa, because of their faith in the sutra itself.

Myōe's Devoted Yearning

Myōe Shōnin (1173–1232) was highly respected as a model monk, and for many reasons is easily one of the most fascinating figures in Kamakura-period Buddhism. Mentioned in the previous chapter for his relationship to the fantastic, Myōe was ordained in the Japanese Kegon school and was a practitioner and ardent, insightful scholar of the visionary, colorful *Avataṃsaka Sūtra* (discussed previously in relation to the Chinese Huayan school). He expended

considerable energy on developing practical means to implement Avataṃsaka teachings about stages of bodhisattva practice. He was also deeply connected with the Shingon school, and thus a mikkyō practitioner and follower of Vajrayāna texts such as the *Mahāvairocana Sūtra*. But despite his primary allegiance to other sutras, as a Kamakura-period Buddhist he could not avoid influence from the *Lotus Sutra* as well. His mother had chanted the Kannon chapter of the *Lotus Sutra*, hoping for a son. After she conceived, she regularly chanted the *Lotus Sutra* throughout her pregnancy with Myōe.[36]

Myōe actively supported the inclusivity of *Lotus Sutra* skillful means and respect for the diversity of teachings and practices. Thus he strongly criticized his noted contemporary Hōnen (1133–1212), founder of the Jōdō–shū Pure Land School, for focusing exclusively on the *nenbutsu* practice of chanting the name of Amida Buddha while actively disregarding and disparaging other practices and buddhas. An adept of the traditional schools, Myōe himself engaged in nenbutsu and other devotional practices as well as meditation, but was alarmed at the trend, expressed most fully at the time by Hōnen, to denigrate all but a single practice strategy.

Myōe's life and practice are noteworthy for his intense religiosity and devotion to visions. For his last forty years, he kept a vivid Dream Diary, considered by modern Jungian analysts to be unique in human history for its duration and lucid self-reflection.[37] In this journal, he included meditative visions together with his sleeping dreams, and it is sometimes not clear where one leaves off and the other begins.

The only mention of the *Lotus Sutra* in Myōe's entire extant Dream Diary is one of the earliest entries, in 1196, and it specifically concerns chapter 16 and the revelation of Buddha's life span. In the entry Myōe describes making summaries of a commentary on this chapter. Pondering its meaning, "tears began to flow as I yearned for the Tathāgata." Later in the dream he says that from that day on he concentrated on chanting the sutra.[38]

Myōe's response to the inconceivable life span of Buddha differs strikingly from that in Saigyō's poem. Whereas Saigyō is comforted and faithfully believes in the omnipresence of "the moon over Vulture Peak," Myōe apparently did not interpret the good news of the expedient nature of Śākyamuni's decease as reassurance of the omnipresence of Śākyamuni. Instead, it inspired his intense yearning to see Śākyamuni, or at least the sites of his teaching in India. On one occasion Myōe keeled over, "reeling from the pain of [the Buddha's] absence."[39]

Myōe seriously planned a pilgrimage to India in 1203, and again in 1204, even attempting to calculate the distance and duration of such an unprecedented journey from Japan using the woefully inaccurate geographical information then available. He was finally dissuaded through dramatic visions of

the protector deity of the Kasuga Shrine in Nara, whom he eventually came to understand as in some sense manifesting Śākyamuni Buddha's body, thereby concretizing the *Lotus Sutra*'s promise of the Buddha's omnipresence.[40] It is fortunate for Myōe that he did not actually accomplish this journey, because during the previous century Buddhism in India had been exterminated by Islamic invaders.

Myōe's vision of the Kasuga divinity recalls a long tradition predating the Kamakura period, referred to as *honji-suijaku*, "true nature manifestations," in which specific native Japanese spirits were considered manifestations of particular buddha or bodhisattva figures. In this system, the buddhas were identified with the fundamental or "original ground" (honji) of the enduring Śākyamuni Buddha of the sixteenth chapter, associated with the last fourteen chapters of the sutra, and each local deity was identified with the "manifest trace" (suijaku) of the Buddha as he appeared in the first fourteen chapters of the sutra.[41] Nichiren would later view the important native Japanese deities Amaterasu and Hachiman as specifically manifestations of the enduring Śākyamuni of chapter 16.[42]

In the story, the *Lotus Sutra* states that Śākyamuni's parinirvāṇa, or passing away into final nirvāṇa, is simply an expedient for the benefit of those who would slacken in their own practice and dedication should they see the Buddha as still present and taking care of the world. Therefore it is ironic that Myōe, who appears unsurpassed for his dedication to the Dharma and his diligent and intelligent efforts to find practical applications of the teachings for practitioners, seemed to derive from chapter 16 only an intense, never quite fulfilled yearning to literally see the Buddha, or at least his relics and sacred sites. Perhaps Myōe, despite his sincere devotion, could not quite make the leap of faith in the enduring Buddha that is suggested in the *Lotus Sutra*. And so he is an example of the pre–*Lotus Sutra* Mahāyāna practitioner who still feels the need for myriad lifetimes of practice, and who will practice only when motivated by Buddha's absence. Myōe even stated this explicitly. As Mark Unno points out, "Myōe felt that if only he could be in the presence of the Buddha, then everything would be all right: 'If I had been born in India, I would not have had to do anything. . . . Paying homage to the Tathāgata[,] I would have had no need for study or practice.' "[43]

Ippen and the Lotus–Pure Land Intersection

The *Lotus Sutra* played a major role in inspiring faith-related East Asian Buddhism, and was especially central in the formation of Japanese Buddhism.

So it is ironic that the new Kamakura schools most commonly associated with devotion, the Pure Land schools, should have largely neglected their Tendai roots in the *Lotus Sutra* when they focused on the Amida nenbutsu. This perhaps can be attributed to the divergent goals of the faith: for the *Lotus Sutra*, faith was in the buddha nature potential in everyone and the possibility of embodiment of the Dharma in this life; in the case of the Pure Land, faith, at least popularly, was in rebirth in Amida's Western Paradise, although the function of such rebirth has been understood quite varyingly over the history of Amidism.

However, Ippen (1239–1289), probably the most prominent Pure Land figure in the period right after Dōgen, maintained a high regard for the *Lotus Sutra*. He is known for his energetic, widespread promulgation of the nenbutsu even with "a single utterance" (the basis for his name, meaning "once"); for his handing out slips of paper printed with "Namu Amida Butsu" ("Homage to Amida Buddha") to those who chanted the nenbutsu once; and for his maintaining of the public, joyful "dancing nenbutsu" practice. But his continuing respect for the *Lotus Sutra* might perhaps reflect his own previous rigorous practice as a *yamabushi* (mountain ascetic).

In the *Record of Ippen*, compiled by his followers five centuries after his life from scattered letters and notes, there are several references to the *Lotus Sutra*. None of these references include the material in chapters 15 and 16, but Ippen does state that the Path of the Lotus and the Pure Land are one, and that whichever is most beneficial to a particular practitioner should be followed. From the Pure Land perspective, which criticizes self-power, Ippen points out that even in the Lotus Path, "one must give up the body and life of the self in order to realize enlightenment." He asserts clearly, "The Dharma-Lotus and the Name [of Amida] are one. The Dharma-Lotus is Dharma as color and form; the Name is Dharma as mind. Since form and (perceiving) mind are nondual, the Dharma-Lotus is itself the Name. Thus the [Pure Land] *Meditation Sutra* teaches, 'The person who utters the nenbutsu is a lotus flower among men.' "[44] For Ippen the Pure Land nenbutsu and the *Lotus Sutra* Dharma are mutually supporting, and ultimately not separate.

Nichiren as Leader of the Underground Bodhisattvas

Dōgen refers to the *Lotus Sutra* as "the great king and the great master of all the various sutras that the Buddha Śākyamuni taught."[45] But Dōgen's central practice was zazen, and he also amply references other sutras, and, even more than the sutras, the recorded sayings or kōans from the Chinese Zen "buddha

ancestors." For Nichiren (1222–1282), on the other hand, the *Lotus Sutra* is the single sacred object around which his whole theology revolves. The main practice of the various Nichiren schools and their offshoots involves chanting the name of the *Lotus Sutra* and venerating a scroll of the sutra's name. And in the more elaborated theology and sutra study also prevalent in Nichiren Buddhism, chapter 16 is especially central. Nichiren focuses on this story of the enduring Śākyamuni as the fulcrum for his teaching. Given this focus, it is fitting that the discussion of Nichiren in this chapter dwarfs most of the other sections in length. For Nichiren, Śākyamuni Buddha's remaining ever-present and his teaching sustained by the underground bodhisattvas is the central spiritual fact.

Nichiren implied in 1272 in "Open Your Eyes" ("Kaimoku-shō") that he was himself a manifest reincarnation of the Bodhisattva Superior Conduct, the leader of all the bodhisattvas who had emerged from the open space under the earth in chapter 15 of the *Lotus Sutra*.[46] "In identifying his efforts with those of Bodhisattva Superior Conduct, Nichiren was claiming a direct connection to the original Buddha."[47] Later on, in the Muromachi period, some exegetes in one of the Nichiren branches would go further, claiming that Nichiren was himself the original Buddha of chapter 16.[48]

But Nichiren also makes explicit in his writings that the long-lived Śākyamuni, and also the underground bodhisattvas, are existent within our own minds. He quotes this passage in chapter 16 of the *Lotus Sutra*: "The duration of my life, which I obtained through the practice of the way of bodhisattvas, has not yet expired. It is twice as long as the length of time stated above: 500 dust-particle kalpas." He comments, "This reveals the bodhisattva-realm within our minds."[49] For Nichiren the realm of bodhisattva practice expressed by the primordial, enduring Buddha, as well as the bodhisattva practice that leads to such a buddha life, is an interior, psychic realm imaged within the minds and hearts of current practitioners.

Nichiren continues that the underground bodhisattvas of chapter 15, "who have sprung out of the great earth, as numerous as the number of dust-particles of 1,000 worlds, are followers of the Original Buddha Śākyamuni who resides within our minds."[50] Nichiren here declares that this "original Buddha" lives as a potential within the minds of Buddhist devotees.

But the effect of the enduring Śākyamuni is not merely limited to the mental or subjective realm for Nichiren: "When the Eternal Buddha was revealed in the essential section of the *Lotus Sutra*, this world of endurance (*Sāha*-world) became the Eternal Pure Land."[51] Nichiren describes the external world of saṃsāra as now, immediately transformed by Śākyamuni Buddha, and consequently indestructible, transcending the changing kalpas. The

powerful impact of the long-lived Buddha on the world itself is a significant model for Nichiren, which has allowed and encouraged Nichiren Buddhism to become one of the forms of Buddhism most concerned and engaged with this world, including social issues.

Further developing the identification of the enduring Buddha with the Buddha's followers, Nichiren states that the "Eternal" Śākyamuni Buddha "exists forever throughout the past, present, and future. All those who receive His guidance are one with the Eternal Buddha."[52] He goes on to state that the Śākyamuni Buddha of the sixteenth chapter differs from the earlier Śākyamuni Buddha of provisional sutras, and advocates that the enduring Śākyamuni, and his image, be the new object of veneration in the current Age of Decline (mappō), replacing images of the Śākyamuni who expounded the pre-Lotus sutras.

Nichiren strongly emphasizes the end of chapter 15 and chapter 16. This is the part of the sutra that "Nichiren judges to be almost exclusively representative of the meaning of the entire scripture."[53] Lucia Dolce describes the difference in Nichiren's interpretation of the sutra from Zhiyi's as Nichiren seeing the long-lived Śākyamuni Buddha as the single ultimate buddha encompassing all others. Whereas Zhiyi emphasized the saṃbhoghakāya, or recompense body, and valued many other particular buddhas, Nichiren declares "that *all* Buddhas enlightened in the past are emanations of Śākyamuni" of chapter 16, based on the events of chapter 11, in which emanations arrive to witness the other Buddha in his stūpa. For Nichiren, this long-lived Buddha includes all three bodies, including the manifested transformation body, nirmāṇakāya, and even Vairocana, the reality body or dharmakāya: "Only the [chapter 16] Śākyamuni who reveals his enlightenment in the past embodies the true Mahāyāna Buddha."[54]

Nichiren's view of temporality is determined by this story, as his emphasis on it "corresponds to the dilation of the temporal dimension expressed in those chapters, that is, the distant past in which Śākyamuni obtained his original enlightenment. Nichiren absolutizes this original moment and makes it the only significant time, and relates it to the existence of humanity in a certain time and place." He does not describe this Buddha as literally eternal, but "uses the expression 'without beginning and without end,'" signifying "an existence not subject to temporal limitations." Because this limitlessness includes the transformation body, "the Buddha has always abided in this world and . . . his soteriological activity has been constant since the original time."[55]

The ontological status of this life span of Śākyamuni has been debated in *Lotus Sutra* commentaries and is sometimes translated as "eternal."[56] Despite Nichiren's own position, English translations of Nichiren Buddhism

(including those cited earlier) generally refer to "Eternal Śākyamuni" to designate the buddha in the sixteenth chapter. But the literal meaning of the Chinese characters in the *Lotus Sutra* text indicate his life span not as ontologically eternal, but simply as unimaginably vast in duration, albeit finite.[57]

The story certainly does imply going far beyond the ordinary view of time and incorporating the atemporal, as Nichiren indicates. But Śākyamuni Buddha also inhabited history for the sake of skillfully aiding and liberating beings temporally located in history. As Nichiren also emphasizes, the portrayal of Śākyamuni's continuing presence suggests some kind of ongoing interaction with history, if only through the agency of the underground bodhisattvas he has trained, but possibly also in more personal modes.

This view of the omnipresent Śākyamuni (functionally still present, even if not eternal) does validate his ongoing veneration in Nichiren practice, as well as a more general template for ritual offerings to Buddha, and also for seeing living teachers in the tradition as reenacting Buddha's role, or even representing Buddha. The inconceivably long-lived Śākyamuni of the *Lotus Sutra* thus offers a form of integration of the atemporal realm with the historical, into which Śākyamuni and the underground bodhisattvas are ever ready to spring forth for the sake of liberating deluded beings.

The complexity of this story about an enduring Śākyamuni obviously foreshadows the post–*Lotus Sutra* teaching of the three bodies of Buddha. As mentioned earlier, the Chinese Tiantai founder Zhiyi saw the *Lotus Sutra* Śākyamuni as primarily a sambhōgakāya buddha integrating all three bodies by realizing the truth of the Dharma body and responding to beings via the manifestation body. But in Japanese Buddhism, beginning with Saichō and throughout the Heian period, the *Lotus Sutra* Śākyamuni came to be increasingly equated with Vairocana, the dharmakāya buddha.[58] The evolving Original Enlightenment *hongaku* theories, based at least in part on this long-lived Śākyamuni, were prevalent in the Tendai school in the Heian and evolving during the Kamakura period, and certainly influenced Kamakura views of chapter 16, especially in Nichiren Buddhism.

Shortly before the Kamakura period there were also Tendai critics of the Original Enlightenment theories, such as Hōchi-bō Shōshin (fl. 12th cent.), who "opposed definitions of Śākyamuni of the 'Fathoming the Lifespan' chapter of the *Lotus Sutra* as an originally inherent Buddha, which, he said, clearly went against the sutra's statement that Śākyamuni had practiced the bodhisattva way and attained Buddhahood in the remote past."[59] The theological issues involved in the story of Śākyamuni's life span were a challenge to the view of reality of all Japanese devotees, which Nichiren resolved in a unique manner.

As already mentioned, the underground bodhisattvas of chapter 15 have special significance for Nichiren: "The countless bodhisattvas who had sprung up from underground were disciples of Lord Śākyamuni Buddha ever since the time He had first resolved to seek Buddhahood."[60] Although they had not visited Śākyamuni throughout his awakening under the bodhi tree and his expounding of the lesser sutras, since making their vow in the *Lotus Sutra* they are especially promised to appear in the mappō times, which Nichiren believed had already arrived.

Thus the underground bodhisattvas are greater for Nichiren than the familiar disciples, and even greater than the celebrated archetypal bodhisattvas such as Samantabhadra, Mañjuśri, and Maitreya. "The numerous great bodhisattvas, who had been guided by the Original Buddha in the past, sprang out of the earth of the whole world, according to [chapter 15]. They looked incomparably superior to Bodhisattva Fugen (Samantabhadra) and Mañjuśri, who had been regarded as ranking disciples. . . . Even Bodhisattva Maitreya, successor to Śākyamuni Buddha, did not know who they were, not to speak of other bodhisattvas."[61]

Nichiren sees the underground bodhisattvas as the model for those who carry out the teaching of the enduring Śākyamuni in current conditions. And Nichiren himself personally identified with these underground bodhisattvas: "When these four great bodhisattvas, leaders of those who sprung up from underground, spread this sutra through aggressive means of propagation, they would appear as wise kings reproaching ignorant kings. Practicing a persuasive means of propagation, they would be monks upholding and spreading the true dharma."[62] In the final age of degenerate Dharma that Nichiren regarded as having arrived in Kamakura-period Japan, the imperative of proclaiming and propagating the *Lotus Sutra* teaching gained a new urgency. It was embodied for Nichiren by the enduring Śākyamuni and especially conveyed to the myriad beings by the underground bodhisattvas.

Through the all-encompassing nature of the *Lotus Sutra*'s Śākyamuni Buddha, as well as the persistent practice of the underground bodhisattvas, "the dharma world itself comes to be conceived as the phenomenal reality which actualizes the ultimate truth. . . . According to Nichiren, in the second section of the Lotus Sutra Śākyamuni speaks of this *sāha* world as the *original land*, a pure Buddha realm." Nichiren's view of the beginningless and endless (practically speaking) Śākyamuni implies for him that the phenomenal world itself becomes an active locus for awakening: "Nichiren considered the assembly on Vulture Peak a symbol of those who, having received the teachings of the Lotus Sutra, are able to transform our *sāha* world into a 'resplendent land.' . . . Since the

world where humans live is also the original world in which the Buddha attained buddhahood, phenomenal reality becomes the ground of the most complete enlightenment, which opens to ultimate reality."[63] Thus, for Nichiren the inconceivable visionary reaches inspired by the vastness of time of the revelation of the Buddha's life span have liberative implications for this world, and for the conditions of this time and place.

There is no evidence that Nichiren ever so much as heard of Dōgen. And yet, these critical perspectives on the active nature of the phenomenal world that Nichiren derived from the central story of the *Lotus Sutra* echo very closely Dōgen's cosmological view of the earth, as we will clearly see in Dōgen's own citations of the story. Dolce describes how this view informed Nichiren's sense of the responsibility for this world of *Lotus Sutra* devotees: "If buddha-seeds occur 'according to circumstances and conditioned cause,' as suggested in the Lotus Sutra itself, both the infinite action of the Buddha and one's own activity are necessary."[64] A similar sense of responsibility, motivated by a similar perspective, might be seen in Dōgen's emphasis on precepts and on the necessity of a lifetime of sustained practice. But the form of practice engagements of Dōgen and Nichiren are, of course, quite different.

The one practice that was the "excellent medicine" for expressing the *Lotus Sutra* truth for Nichiren was recitation and veneration of the syllables "Namu Myō-hō-ren-ge-kyō," the homage to the name of the *Lotus Sutra* that Nichiren saw as a symbolic embodiment of this enduring Śākyamuni and called "the essence of the chapter, 'Duration of the Life of the Buddha.'" He declared that these five characters were transmitted only to the underground bodhisattvas, who would proclaim them in the future "evil age," which had now arrived in Kamakura-period Japan.[65] Nichiren says, "At this time, the bodhisattvas who sprang up from the earth will appear for the first time in the world to bestow upon the children the medicine of the five characters *Myōhō-renge-kyō*."[66]

For Nichiren, the leap of faith expressed in the *Lotus Sutra* is grounded in the mappō theory, a pressing reality for him that was completely rejected by Dōgen.[67] Nichiren believed that the importance of Śākyamuni's remaining presence, and even more, of the proclamation of it by the underground bodhisattvas, was that the teaching was still available, even in the present evil age of mappō. Thanks only to the underground bodhisattvas and the enduring Śākyamuni, the faithful still had the opportunity to hear the teaching and to express their faith through veneration and chanting of the name of the *Lotus Sutra*. But Nichiren went even further: "By defining the beginning of the Final Dharma age as the precise historical moment when the Buddha's ultimate teaching, the *Lotus Sutra*, shall spread, Nichiren was able to reverse the con-

ventional gloomy connotations of the last age and celebrate it as the best possible time to be alive."[68]

The extraordinary self-referential quality of the *Lotus Sutra*, discussed in chapter 2 of this work, also had an important effect on both Dōgen and Nichiren in their responses to the enduring Śākyamuni and the sutra itself. Whereas the impact of the self-referential is most clearly expressed by Dōgen in his style of Dharma proclamation, for Nichiren the manner in which the sutra proclaims its own value and soteriological role becomes the basis for his religious praxis. Nichiren takes the sutra literally in this respect. Perhaps more than any other major Buddhist thinker, he elevates one scripture as sacred essence and object. The sutra itself extensively extols the virtues of copying, reading, and reciting the sutra. Nichiren simplified and consolidated these practices into chanting its name and venerating the written name of the sutra as an icon.

Hakuin's *Lotus Sutra* Awakening

Of all the colorful and venerable figures in the history of Japanese Rinzai Zen, Hakuin Ekaku (1686–1768) was probably the most influential. Hakuin was a dynamic, impressive character, from whose teaching the modern Rinzai kōan curriculum derives, and from whom all modern Rinzai Zen lineages descend. A vigorous, ardent Zen student, he fiercely confronted the "great ball of doubt," straining his nervous system such that he endured several episodes of "Zen sickness." But he overcame these to have many dramatic opening experiences of deep realization: *satori*, or "seeing the nature" (*kenshō*). As a teacher, Hakuin later demanded rigorous efforts from his students to experience similar breakthroughs. But with the range of common people who sought him out, he could also be very warm and flexible, finding appropriate meditative practices for Nichiren and Pure Land devotees, for example. After retiring from active teaching, he did calligraphy scrolls and often humorous brush paintings of Zen topics, many now considered museum masterpieces. He also left a wide body of writings, including an unusual quantity of autobiographical records recounting his spiritual adventures.

Hakuin had a significant relationship with the *Lotus Sutra*. In his writing "The Poisonous Leavings of Past Masters," he relates how he heard the *Lotus Sutra* extolled as a young monk of fifteen, but upon reading found it wanting and irrelevant to his spiritual concerns. At that time he agreed with Linji's (Rinzai) total dismissal of the sutras, including the *Lotus Sutra*, as "mere

verbal prescriptions for relieving the world's ills."[69] When he was forty Hakuin looked at the *Lotus Sutra* again, and when reading the third chapter he suddenly realized that it was indeed the "king of sutras": "A loud involuntary cry burst from the depths of my being and I began sobbing uncontrollably. . . . I knew without any doubt that what I had realized in all those satoris I had experienced, what I had grasped in my understanding of those koans I had passed—had all been totally mistaken. I was finally able to penetrate the source of the free, enlightened activity."[70]

Hakuin gave Dharma talks on the *Lotus Sutra* and regularly referred to its stories, though most often to the parables in the first half of the sutra.[71] In a lengthy, eloquent letter about the *Lotus Sutra* responding to an elderly nun of the Lotus (Nichiren) school, he praises the sutra as the ultimate teaching, in which not only all buddhas but "mountains, rivers, [and] the great earth . . . bespeak the Dharma principle that all things are a nondual unity representing the true appearance of all things. This is the fundamental principle of Buddhism." He adds, "Reaching this place is called the *Lotus Sutra*, or the Buddha of immeasurable life-span," which he also equates with the Zen "original face."[72] Thus Hakuin echoes Dōgen in emphasizing the liberating role of the earth when it is informed by the *Lotus Sutra*.

In this letter, right after equating zazen and recitation of the *Lotus Sutra* in their power to clarify mind, Hakuin explicitly quotes Dōgen about the great value of practicing this even for one day.[73] Hakuin encourages sustained thorough engagement of the Lotus samādhi, through which he affirms, "Your body and mind will drop off. The true, unlimited, eternal, perfected Tathāgata will manifest himself clearly before your eyes and never depart."[74] He goes on to lament at length the neglect of the *Lotus Sutra* by his contemporaries.

Ryōkan in the Safe and Peaceful Land

The *Lotus Sutra* has been commonly perceived as tangential to Dōgen, and to Japanese Sōtō Zen generally. The eighteenth-century literary figure Ryōkan (1758–1831) is arguably the most renowned Sōtō priest of the past few centuries. In discussing Ryōkan, Ryūichi Abé says, "Although Ryōkan appears to have remained faithful to the religious ideals of his Sōtō progenitor Dōgen, there was nothing sectarian about Ryōkan's Buddhist practice. Among the numerous Buddhist scriptures, the *Lotus Sutra*—a popular text not particularly emphasized in traditional Sōtō training but the essential scripture of the Tendai and Nichiren schools—was by far his favorite."[75] While the *Lotus Sutra* is certainly not nearly as important to Dōgen or Sōtō as it is to Nichiren,

Ryōkan's great appreciation for it reveals the lingering appropriation of the *Lotus Sutra* in Sōtō Zen, an appreciation and usage that goes back to the Japanese Sōtō founder Dōgen.

After completing his monastic training, Ryōkan returned to his home village and lived very humbly in a grass hut outside town, supporting himself though traditional begging rounds. He is most often celebrated and still beloved in Japan for the many colorful stories about his innocent, quirky character, including regular play with village children, which earned him the Dharma name "Great Fool." Ryōkan is greatly esteemed as a poet and calligrapher whose brushwork already was highly valued during his lifetime. But he was also a well-trained Sōtō monk who was an accomplished meditator as well as a devoted scholar of Buddhism. Notably, "among the scriptural texts Ryōkan studied, the *Lotus Sūtra* is by far the most important source of inspiration for his poetry." He "expressed his love of the scripture in many poems inspired by the sutra's principal motifs."[76] Further, Ryōkan personally copied out the whole sutra, a traditional practice of *Lotus Sutra* devotees extolled in the sutra itself.

Ryōkan's profuse poetry (both Japanese waka and Chinese *kanshi*) most often evocatively described and celebrated his life of meditation, of begging rounds, and of play with children. These verses are often filled with his sense of deep contentment and joy, but also include descriptions of his humble circumstances and the poignant loneliness of a life of reclusion, outside of the comfort of the fellowship of other monks. Yet he also wrote many poems and some prose pieces on Buddhist doctrinal matters, including his love of the writings of Dōgen; reflections on the priesthood and on begging practice; and lists of practice suggestions, the latter used apparently as reminders to himself.[77]

A number of Ryōkan's verses contain references to the *Lotus Sutra*, for example those extolling the bodhisattva "Never-Despising Anyone" Sadāparibhūta, featured in chapter 20 of the sutra. Because of this bodhisattva's indomitable practice of bowing to everyone and seeing their buddha nature, he was a particular hero to Ryōkan.[78] These verses were part of a collection of 122 that he wrote commenting on the *Lotus Sutra* chapter by chapter.[79]

Among these, Ryōkan's eight verses for chapters 15 and 16 describe the story somewhat straightforwardly, but poetically. For example, while colorfully describing the inconceivability of the Buddha's life span, Ryōkan points out the importance of Buddha's skillfulness in appearing to pass into parinirvāṇa:

> Emptiness can be grasped, and the wind may be tied down,
> But the life-span of the Tathāgata cannot be fathomed.

Although he constantly abides on Vulture Peak expounding
Dharma,
He dares not let people observe him easily. (80)[80]

Yet Ryōkan gives priority to the reality of the continuing teaching of Śākyamuni with a clear and striking image:

Whether expounding his own or others' bodies,
He shows passing into nirvāṇa and also continuously abides.
If there was a finish to his expounding on Vulture Peak
The limitless hundreds of rivers would not flow into the ocean.
(81)[81]

Ryōkan especially celebrates the effect of the chapter 16 Śākyamuni on the land itself. In his expounding, this present place becomes an indestructible buddha land, fully satisfying all spiritual needs. This sense of place must have been palpable for Ryōkan and informed his presence in the woods around his hut and the village byways where he begged and played games with the children.

When the kalpa-ending fire blazes, destroying the billion worlds,
This land of mine is truly safe and peaceful.
This is the divine sage's wondrous mystery;
Who'd need point to the Mystic Island and cross the billowing
waves? (83)[82]

In another of these verses, Ryōkan uses the skillfulness of the Buddha's teaching about his life span to affirm Dōgen's primary teaching about the oneness of practice or cultivation with accomplished realization:

It is said the Way should be cultivated and achieved,
But it is true folly to regard the latter as separate from the former.
If sentient beings did not have a variety of minds,
The Tathāgata would not expound various teachings. (82)[83]

Despite the variety of teachings, for Ryōkan, as for Dōgen, every aspect of practice at every stage completely expresses the ongoing enduring fulfillment of the awakening of the *Lotus Sutra* Buddha.

Shunryū Suzuki and the *Lotus Sutra* in American Zen

One of the most important Japanese teachers in the modern importation of Dōgen's lineage to the West is Shunryū Suzuki (1904–1971), a Sōtō Zen priest who lived in California from 1959 until his death. During this time he founded

the San Francisco Zen Center, including its Tassajara monastery in the remote mountains of Monterey County, the first Zen monastery in the West. These sites remain prominent centers of Zen practice in America, and a collection of Suzuki's informal talks, *Zen Mind Beginner's Mind*, remains a foremost classic of American Buddhism.[84]

Dōgen was endeavoring to import Chinese Chan into Japan, already a strongly Buddhist culture. He was introducing his disciples to the vast Chinese kōan literature, but his references to the *Lotus Sutra* were all very familiar to his students. But Suzuki was introducing Zen Buddhist practice into a culture that had nearly no context of meditation and had distorted ideas of Buddhism as an exotic Oriental philosophy. Moreover, many of Suzuki's students arrived from the center of the '60s hippie counterculture in San Francisco, open to new ideas but with their own individualist prejudices and strong proclivities for intoxication.

Given his students' lack of any Buddhist background, it is striking that Suzuki, along with regular references to Dōgen in his talks, gave a series of lectures on three texts, and that one of them was the *Lotus Sutra*. The other two were the *Blue Cliff Record*, *Hekigan Roku*, one of the primary Zen kōan collections, and the Chinese teaching poem "Harmony of Difference and Sameness" ("Sandōkai"), a short verse by a Chinese Caodong lineage progenitor, Shitou Xiqian (700–790; Sekitō Kisen in Japanese), which is chanted regularly in Sōtō Zen.[85] These two texts might be expected of a Japanese Sōtō Zen master introducing his practice to unlearned Americans. But his choice of the *Lotus Sutra* would remain quite surprising to many American Zen scholars not familiar with Dōgen's own connection to the sutra.

Suzuki gave this series of lectures on the *Lotus Sutra* from February 1968 to November 1969 at Tassajara monastery. Most of his students found these talks "dry and deadly dull."[86] And yet Suzuki persisted. In these talks he expands to diverse subjects, especially in the discussions with students, but his treatment of the text itself in sequence does not get past chapter 2 of the sutra (although he gives one reference to the parable at the end of chapter 16 about the physician who pretends to pass away so that his sons will take their medicine).[87]

Suzuki to some extent echoes Zhiyi (whom Suzuki does mention), as he discusses at length the central role of the Sambhogakāya Buddha, who he claims spoke the *Lotus Sutra*. Suzuki states, "Because this sutra was told by the Sambhogakāya Buddha instead of the historical Buddha, it is valuable."[88] He further says, "The Sambhogakāya Buddha is the original source of the Nirmānakāya Buddha . . . [who] has no eternal life. He is just one of the great heroes in our history. But when we understand Śākyamuni Buddha as

a Sambhogakāya Buddha, or a Dharmakāya Buddha, for the first time he has perpetual life."[89]

Of course, Suzuki was a dedicated student of Dōgen, so he naturally expresses the viewpoints we will see from Dōgen. This extends even to Dōgen's style of rhetorical proclamation from the *Lotus Sutra*, as described in the previous chapter. Suzuki declares that when we understand that the sutra "was spoken by the Sambhogakāya Buddha, or when we understand that, 'I am now reading the *Lotus Sutra*,' then the *Lotus Sutra* makes sense to us. . . . I said, 'I am reading,' but actually, I meant, 'I am telling the *Lotus Sutra*.' "[90] In this way readers of the sutra themselves become the Sambhogakāya and continue the life of Buddha. Suzuki also proclaims the lively, playful hermeneutic required by the sutra: "If you read this sutra literally, you will not understand it properly. This sutra is told in various ways, back and forth; it's sometimes this way and sometimes the other way. That is why the sutra is valuable. [It] could be very artistic or poetic."[91]

Suzuki presents his discussion of the Sambhogakāya Buddha early in the lecture series, indicating the importance to him of how this teaching illuminates the reality of earth and space. He says that this Buddha "is the source of all buddhas, which exist before Buddha. In this sense, Buddha is eternal, perpetual being. . . . The *Lotus Sutra* is the sutra which describes this kind of reality, the world of *tathāta* in Sanskrit [suchness or thusness]." In terms of this reality of intersubjective awareness as it applies to earth, "when he observes his inside world, as the sun does, he finds himself as earth. That earth nature is universal. This earth is also earth, and the sun is also earth. Everything is earth, so there is no difference between the objective world and the subjective world." So for the Sambhogakāya Buddha, "his world is limitless. It includes the sun and stars and everything. So his virtue and wisdom are also limitless. He . . . knows everything as being within himself. For him there is nothing outside his being."[92] Thus Suzuki echoes and expands on the inclusive worldview of earth and space that we will see elucidated by Dōgen.

Suzuki also mentions the implications of this reality and the Buddha's life span to a view of time. "Since [his disciples'] adoration for Buddha extended limitlessly, his practice before he attained enlightenment, or Buddhahood, became limitless. It follows that, if Buddha is a limitlessly lofty person, the time he practiced his way must also have been limitlessly long. In this way, the historical Buddha became more and more something like Absolute Being."[93] In accord with Dōgen's temporal perspectives, Suzuki clarifies the multidimensionality of time: "There is no separate past, present, and future. Past and future already exist in this present moment. . . . If you do something good, your future is bound to be good; and that you are good means that your past life was good."[94]

In his *Lotus Sutra* lectures Suzuki also said that he was impressed as a boy hearing his mother regularly recite the chant from chapter 25 on the bodhisattva of compassion, Kanzeon (Avalokiteśvara), which describes the miraculous saving power available to devotees who call on this bodhisattva when in peril.[95] This is a text only rarely chanted in American Zen centers, as its devotional tone seems strange to many Western sensibilities.[96] That verse is one of two from the *Lotus Sutra* chanted daily in Japanese Sōtō Zen (though still infrequently in the West), the other being the closing verse of the "Life Span of the Tathāgata" chapter.[97] The persisting importance of the *Lotus Sutra* in the Japanese Sōtō tradition reflects its importance to Dōgen. And the relative lack of emphasis of the sutra's Mahāyāna perspectives in American Zen studies and practice might signify the latter's newness and lack of development.

Thematic Summary

Before examining Dōgen's own responses to the story in chapters 15 and 16 of the *Lotus Sutra*, it will be useful to enumerate a few main themes expressed in these various East Asian responses.

One issue is the nature of the earth or ground. For Daosheng it is an obstacle and the "ground of defilement." But Zhanran sees "the phenomenal world as the very locus of awakening." For Nichiren and Hakuin this world is the ground of awakening. And for Saigyō and Ryōkan the Lotus land can be apprehended poetically in their present world.

Both Nichiren and Hakuin also share an emphasis on the ongoing responsibility to practice, though in the different modes of chanting the *daimoku* ("Namu Myō-hō-ren-ge-kyō") and kōan or zazen practice, respectively. A related issue is the varying views of the role of the underground bodhisattvas and how they relate to our current practice responsibility. Most remarkable is Nichiren's view of himself as the literal reincarnation of the leader of the underground bodhisattvas.

Finally, there is a range of interpretations about the nature of the Buddha of the *Lotus Sutra*. Saigyō sees the Buddha as still present, whereas Myōe earnestly laments his absence. Zhiyi and Shunryū Suzuki emphasize the pivotal role of the saṃbhoghakāya, whereas for Nichiren the long-lived Śākyamuni of the *Lotus Sutra* as the dharmakāya is more central. The ultimate reality body may also be seen as primary for Zhanran.

Not all of these themes will emerge as strongly in Dōgen's interpretations of chapters 15 and 16, but we can see these as an interpretive context.

This page intentionally left blank

4

Dōgen's Interpretations of This *Lotus Sutra* Story

Dōgen quotes the *Lotus Sutra* more by far than any other sutra, and with unsurpassed veneration. In the *Shōbōgenzō* (*True Dharma Eye Treasury*) essay "Taking Refuge in the Three Treasures" ("Kie Buppōsō-hō"), he quotes a passage from the closing verse of chapter 16 about how beings who are beset by their evil karma do not ever hear the name of the three treasures (buddha, Dharma, and sangha), whereas those who are virtuous, gentle, and upright see the Buddha's enduring presence on Vulture Peak.[1] Immediately after quoting from chapter 16 about the Buddha's enduring life span, Dōgen says that this *Lotus Sutra* is itself the single great cause for the appearance of buddha tathāgatas, substituting the sutra itself for the intention to awaken all beings cited as the single great cause for buddhas in chapter 2 of the sutra. Then he declares that the *Lotus Sutra* "may be said to be the great king and the great master of all the various sutras that the Buddha Śākyamuni taught. Compared with this sutra, all the other sutras are merely its servants, its relatives, for it alone expounds the Truth."[2]

Among all of the numerous references to the *Lotus Sutra* in Dōgen's masterwork *Shōbōgenzō*, he refers in more of the essays to chapter 16 on the Buddha's life span than to any other chapter, with the exception of chapter 2 on skillful means.[3] Dōgen often mentions from the second chapter the one great cause for buddhas manifesting in the world: to lead beings into the path to awakening. He also frequently cites the chapter 2 statement "Only a buddha

together with a buddha can fathom the Reality of All Existence."[4] He focuses on this saying in his *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Only Buddha and Buddha" ("Yuibutsu Yobutsu") as a support for the Zen face-to-face Dharma transmission tradition.[5]

The *Lotus Sutra* dedication to Śākyamuni Buddha also fits the main Buddha figure used in the Zen of Dōgen, rather than the Buddhas Amida or Vairocana venerated in his contemporary Pure Land and Esoteric (and Kegon) movements. But perhaps most fundamentally, the significant presence of the *Lotus Sutra* in Dōgen's teaching highlights the substantial foundation of Mahāyāna thought and practice underlying his worldview and teachings. The following discussion does not address Dōgen's numerous references to upāya, or to many other sections of the *Lotus Sutra*, but focuses on his primary responses to chapters 15 and 16.

The Lotus Turning and Being Turned

In the essay in *Shōbōgenzō* that most directly and fully focuses on the *Lotus Sutra*, called "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" ("Hokke-Ten-Hokke") from 1241, Dōgen celebrates the value of sutras while explicitly responding to the Zen axiom about sutra study that privileges direct mind-to-mind teaching above study of words and letters.[6] The essay centers on a dialogue from the *Platform Sutra* of the Sixth Ancestor, Dajian Huineng (638–713; Daikan Enō in Japanese), who tells a monk who has memorized the *Lotus Sutra* that he does not understand the sutra. Huineng tells the monk, "When the mind is in delusion, the Flower of Dharma turns. When the mind is in realization [enlightenment], we turn the Flower of Dharma."[7] Dōgen clarifies how this story implies the necessity for an awakened hermeneutical approach to the active, practical applications of sutra study, rather than being caught by reified scriptural formulations.

Much of the essay involves intricate wordplay and discussion concerning the polarity of turning the Dharma flower, or else being turned by it, which Dōgen eventually resolves in characteristically nondualistic fashion. In the conclusion he says that now that we have heard about this turning or being turned and "experienced the meeting of the ancient buddha with ancient buddhas, how could this not be a land of ancient buddhas? We should rejoice that the Dharma flower is turning from age to age, and the Dharma flower is turning from day to night, as the Dharma flower turns the ages and turns the days and nights."[8] For Dōgen, the reality of the Dharma flower and of the Buddha's enduring life span transforms the very earth and time itself. He ends the lengthy essay by proclaiming, "The reality that exists as it is . . . is

profound, great, and everlasting [referencing the Buddha's life span], is mind in delusion, the Flower of Dharma turning, and is mind in realization, turning the Flower of Dharma, which is really just the Flower of Dharma turning the Flower of Dharma. . . . If perfect realization can be like this, the Flower of Dharma turns the Flower of Dharma. When we serve offerings to it, venerate, honor, and praise it like this, the Flower of Dharma is the Flower of Dharma."[9]

In Dōgen's reality, ultimately the Lotus turning the practitioner, as well as the practitioner turning the Lotus, are both simply instances of the Lotus Dharma turning the Lotus Dharma. The Dharma of the *Lotus Sutra* is simply nondual and wondrous. As Jikidō Takasaki comments, "Without turning the Dharma flower there is no Dharma flower turning, as the Dharma flower turning then gives birth to the next turning of the Dharma flower. The single true matter transmitted in succession from the ancients in the remote past until long into distant future ages is the alternating interchange of turning the Dharma flower and the Dharma flower turning."[10] In the light of the *Lotus Sutra* and Dōgen's view of it, studying the sutra and personal experience of realization in practice are not contradictory, but mutually supporting, cooperative activities. The point of these activities, as indicated in chapter 2, is their liberative efficacy. Takasaki also notes, "The purpose of turning the Dharma flower is to turn the deluded mind into awakened mind. Without the deluded mind, both the Dharma flower turning and turning the Dharma flower are useless. Without turning the deluded mind into awakened mind, both [turnings] would be meaningless."[11]

There is a traditional practice of *ten*, "turning" or "unfolding" the pages of a sutra, in which the pages are fanned from front to back as a symbolic reading and enactment of it. However, for Dōgen it is in the practitioners' appreciation and active expression of this nondual unfolding reality that the Dharma flower finds its true blossoming. I will return to such practice encouragement by Dōgen toward the end of this chapter.

On the way to Dōgen's nondual conclusion of "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," after the initial presentation of the Sixth Ancestor's story, Dōgen presents an extended section on how "the mind in delusion, the Flower of Dharma turns" the practitioner. For Dōgen it is necessary to equally study the Dharma flower turning as well as one's turning of the Dharma flower. Genryū Kagamishima comments, "There is no way to be released from the deluded mind other than penetrating through deluded mind."[12] Dōgen finally expresses his nondualism, and offers deep consolation, by saying that being turned by the Dharma flower is also part of the One Vehicle, so "do not worry about the mind being deluded."[13]

This section on the deluded mind is followed by an extended section on "the mind in realization, we turn the Flower of Dharma," near the beginning of which is a substantial reference to and comment on chapters 15 and 16, which I discuss below in a variety of contexts. It begins:

> The multitudes of the thousandfold world that spring out of the earth have long been great honored saints of the flower of Dharma but they spring out of the earth being turned by circumstances. In turning the Flower of Dharma we should not only realize springing out of the earth; in turning the Flower of Dharma we should also realize springing out of space. We should know with the Buddha's wisdom not only earth and space but also springing out of the Flower of Dharma itself. In general, in the Time of the Flower of Dharma, inevitably, the father is young and the son is old. It is neither that the son is not the son, nor that the father is not the father; we should just learn that the son is old and the father young. Do not imitate the disbelief of the world and be surprised. [Even] the disbelief of the world is the Time of the Flower of Dharma. This being so, in turning the Flower of Dharma we should realize the one Time in which the Buddha is living. Turned by disclosure, display, realization, and entering, we spring out of the earth; and turned by the Buddha's wisdom, we spring out of the earth.[14]

In this passage, which well illustrates Dōgen's characteristic style of wordplay in examining texts, he discusses the significance of bodhisattvas springing out of the earth and the time of the Buddha's inconceivable life span. He first points out that the veteran underground bodhisattvas "spring out of the earth being turned by circumstances." That is to say, they spring out of the ground in response to circumstances, to karmic causes and conditions, to the needs of suffering beings, and, in this case, to the need of Buddha.

One implied meaning of this *Lotus Sutra* ground for Dōgen is thus the conditioned reality of this present space, as in Dōgen's frequent teaching about the value to practice of abiding in, or totally exerting, one's own Dharma position (*hō-i,* 法位), which is the totality of the present circumstances, including the multiplicity of effects of previous causes and conditions.[15] Hee-Jin Kim states, "What makes a particular position of time a Dharma-position is the appropriation of these particularities in such a manner that they are seen nondualistically in and through the mediation of emptiness. As such, the significance of the existential qualities and phenomenalities of things and events is by no means minimized."[16] For Dōgen, the ultimate emptiness or impermanence of all things and events does not diminish the need to fully engage

in practice the present particulars of the conditioned world. And there is no place or time other than this current, impermanent Dharma position in which to enact this practice. Dōgen often emphasizes ordinary, everyday reality, such as the activities of daily monastic practice, as the locus of awakening and of the sacred and the importance of not seeking liberation outside of the grounding of immediate everyday circumstances.

The Lotus Land's Dharma Position

This ground of our everyday Dharma position, and the earth from which the bodhisattvas emerge, also exemplify the practical importance for Dōgen of the Buddha land, the earth itself. In Dharma hall discourse 269 from 1248 in *Eihei Kōroku*, Dōgen's other major masterwork, with shorter, more personal talks to his trainees than those in *Shōbōgenzō*, he says, "The Buddha of the land pervades the body and is the entire body. The lands of the Buddha are the suchness of reality, and their non-suchness."[17]

In traditional Mahāyāna Buddhism, when a buddha awakens, the world around that buddha is constellated as a buddha field (*kṣetra* in Sanskrit), and the land itself is purified and illuminated.[18] As Étienne Lamotte describes it, "The buddhakṣetra is the fruit of the great compassion (*mahākaruṇā*) of the Buddha, who, in a given field, undertakes to do Buddha deeds (*buddhakārya*), that is, to cause beings to 'ripen' (*paripācana*) by developing in them the three 'good roots' (*kuśalamūla*), absence of greed (*alobha*), of hatred (*adveṣa*) and of confusion (*amoha*)."[19] Dōgen uses the story of the bodhisattvas from under the ground as an image to express and develop his own understanding of the buddha land, which we saw in the first chapter in his early 1231 writing, "Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way" ("Bendōwa"), now considered part of *Shōbōgenzō*, where he says that when one person fully performs zazen, "all space in the universe completely becomes enlightenment."[20]

In Dharma hall discourse 91 from 1241 in *Eihei Kōroku*, Dōgen speaks poetically of the spiritual fertility of the earth when all beings abide in their Dharma positions with the Buddha's enduring presence. He begins by quoting Śākyamuni Buddha from chapter 16 of the sutra: "Since I attained buddhahood, I always remain here expounding Dharma."[21] He concludes:

> All dharmas dwell in their Dharma positions; forms in the world are always present. Wild geese return to the [north] woods, and orioles appear [in early spring]. Not having attained suchness, already suchness is attained. Already having attained suchness, how is it?

> *After a pause Dōgen said*: In the third month of spring, fruits are full on the Bodhi tree. One night the blossom opens and the world is fragrant.[22]

With the Buddha abiding in this world, the suchness of all things can blossom and be realized by all beings.

On hearing this particular Dharma hall discourse given to his assembled monks in 1241 in Kyoto—with its grounding of proclamation of the ultimate suchness of Buddha's awakening right within the concrete, natural expressions of this land and earth—one of Dōgen's major disciples, Tettsū Gikai (1219–1309), is said to have had his first major experience of awakening.[23] Gikai went on to become Dōgen's second-generation successor as abbot at Eiheiji after Koun Ejō (1198–1280). After Dōgen's death, Gikai himself traveled to China to learn more about Chan monastic forms, and he was instrumental in spreading Sōtō Zen in Japan, along with his own successor, Keizan Jōkin (1264–1325).[24] This 1241 Dharma hall discourse's inspiration for Gikai exemplifies the fertility of Dōgen's expression of the awakened earth.

The Grounding of Space

In the passage quoted earlier from the "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," Dōgen compares the springing out of the earth by the bodhisattvas to springing out of space: "We should not only realize springing out of the earth; in turning the Flower of Dharma we should also realize springing out of space." Here Dōgen implies a correlation between earth and space. Indeed, a number of his references to space contain the use of earth imagery to signify spatial dimension. A significant example, mentioned just above, is the "Self-Fulfillment Samādhi" (*jijuyū zanmai*) section of Dōgen's important early writing, "Talk on Wholehearted Practice of the Way," in which he describes the enlightenment of space itself. In explicating this declaration of the awakening of space itself, he identifies the earth with the whole of space and all the things that are space: grasses, trees, fences, and so forth: "At this time, because earth, grasses and trees, fences and walls, tiles and pebbles, all things in the dharma realm in the universe in ten directions carry out buddha-work, therefore everyone receives the benefit of wind and water movement caused by this functioning, and all are imperceptibly helped by the wondrous and incomprehensible influence of buddha to actualize the enlightenment at hand."[25] All the elements or forms of the earth and space themselves "carry

out buddha-work" as partners in the beneficial process of actualizing enlightenment.

In the 1245 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Space" ("Kokū"), Dōgen further clarifies that space is not an empty container, the absence of forms, nor the air between things; rather, space is things themselves, as just elaborated in "Talk on Wholehearted Practice of the Way," where "grasses and trees, fences and walls, tiles and pebbles, all things in the dharma realm in the universe in ten directions" are exactly space.[26]

Dōgen begins his "Space" essay with a story about two Chinese Zen masters, Shigong Huizang (n.d.; Shakkyō Ezō in Japanese) and his younger Dharma brother, Xitang Zhizang (735–814; Seido Chizō in Japanese). Shigong asked, "Do you know how to grasp space?"

The younger brother, Zhizang, said, "Yes I do."

Shigong asked, "How do you grasp it?"

Zhizang stroked the air with his hand.

Shigong said, "You don't know how to grasp space."

Zhizang asked, "How do you grasp it, older brother?"

Shigong grasped his younger brother's nose and yanked. The Chinese might even be rendered that he stuck his finger in the younger brother's nostril before pulling.

Either way, Zhizang yelled in pain, "You're killing me! You tried to pull my nose off!"

Shigong declared, "You can grasp it now!"[27]

One common idea of space is as a kind of empty container, just as our conventional idea of time, disputed by Dōgen in the 1240 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Being Time" ("Uji"), is of an objective temporal container. But for Dōgen, space is form itself. Space is the nostril, and the nose around it. Dōgen says, "Space is one ball that bounces here and there."[28]

About Shigong saying "You can grasp it now," Dōgen says, "It is not that space and other space reached out together with one hand. No effort was needed for grasping space. There is no gap in the entire world to let space in, but this story has been a peal of thunder in space." He adds, "You have some understanding of grasping space. Even if you have a good finger to grasp space, you should penetrate the inside and outside of space. You should kill space and give life to space. You should know the weight of space. You should trust that the buddha ancestors' endeavor of the way, in aspiration, practice, and enlightenment, throughout the challenging dialogues is no other than grasping space."[29]

This "killing space and giving life to space" is a recurring theme in Dōgen's writings about the nature of space. Space is not just the air between things; space is things themselves. Until his nose was pulled, Zhizang apparently thought that space was just the empty air. With the immediacy of experience of his own painful nose space, the reality of space could finally be grasped. For Dōgen, space is not an abstraction, but is concretely physical, and not at all apart from the dynamic effort of aspiration and practice. Giving life to space involves, first of all, recognizing its omnipresence and potential impact right in the forms we engage.

In "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," after relating earth and space as the source from whence the bodhisattvas emerge, Dōgen adds, "We should know with the Buddha's wisdom not only earth and space but also springing out of the Flower of Dharma itself." The correlation of earth and space is here described as the context for emergence from the *Lotus Sutra* itself. This correspondence represents for Dōgen the awakened realm as nondualistically present right in the ground of this conditioned world.

A further passage about space in this section reads, "Vulture Peak [where the *Lotus Sutra* was preached] exists inside the stupa and the treasure stupa exists on Vulture Peak." This is a reference to the story in the *Lotus Sutra*, chapter 11, of the ancient Buddha Prabhūtaratna, who appears in his stūpa hanging in midair above Vulture Peak. He comes to hear Śākyamuni, the historical Buddha of this age, preach the *Lotus Sutra*. But it is also said that this ancient buddha always appears in his stūpa *whenever* this *Lotus Sutra* is being expounded, thereby demonstrating the self-referential aspect of the sutra discussed in chapter 2. Dōgen says about the appearance of this stūpa, "The treasure stupa is a treasure stupa in space, and space makes space for the treasure stupa."[30] By saying "Space makes space for the treasure stupa" (虚空は宝塔を虚空す) of this ancient buddha, Dōgen again indicates that space is not just an object in a dead, objective world. The space that makes space is a lively, active agent, and here it is especially celebrated right in the space in which the *Lotus Sutra* is expounded.

The Form of Space as the Flowering of Emptiness

A line in a verse section of chapter 15 about the realm from whence the underground bodhisattvas emerge reads, "In the under side, in open space, they dwell" (下方空中住). Dōgen says in "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," "The meaning of this downward direction [under side] is exactly the

inside of space."[31] He continues: "This *downward*, and this *space*, are just the turning of the Flower of Dharma and are just the lifetime of the Buddha. We should realize, in turning the Flower of Dharma, that the Buddha's lifetime, the Flower of Dharma, the world of Dharma, and the wholehearted state, are realized as *downward*, and also realized as *space*. Thus *downward-space* describes just the realization of turning the Flower of Dharma."[32] Here Dōgen explicitly emphasizes that the open space below the ground, where the underground bodhisattvas dwell, is itself the realization of the *Lotus Sutra* and of the life span of the Buddha. For Dōgen the realization is both specific, this place down here, and inclusive, as all space.

In this section of the essay, Dōgen also clarifies that in his discussion of earth and space he is interpreting the *Lotus Sutra* by characteristically indulging in a significant pun, using the double meaning of *kū* (空) as both space and emptiness. Soon after affirming the open space underground as the realization of the *Lotus Sutra* and as the life span of Buddha, he refers to the famous "Heart Sutra" passage, when he states, "There is turning the Lotus of 'Form is exactly emptiness,' and turning the Lotus of 'Emptiness is exactly form.'"[33] The character kū that is translated as "space" can also be translated as "emptiness." It is the same character used for "emptiness" in the "Heart Sutra" passage that reads in Sino-Japanese, "Shiki fu i kū, kū fu i shiki. Shiki soku ze kū, kū soku ze shiki," meaning, "Form does not differ from emptiness, emptiness does not differ from form. Form itself is exactly emptiness, emptiness itself form."[34] Though "emptiness" in that statement is kū, in the contexts discussed here from the *Lotus Sutra* chapter 15 and in "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," it means simply "space," but with the other meaning acknowledged as an overtone.

Thus Dōgen explicitly recognizes the bodhisattvas' underground open "space" as also emptiness, or *śunyatā*. This verifies the immanence of the emptiness, or the insubstantiality of all existents, within the ground of earth/space, and the empty nature of all the forms that compose earth and space. This kū is also the second of the two characters in "Kokū," translated as "Space," the *Shōbōgenzō* essay featuring the story about grasping the nose as space. (The first character of Kokū, *ko* [虚], means "vacant" or "empty.") When he uses this character kū, sometimes in context Dōgen is clearly talking about space, about spatial dimensionality, or simply about the sky. But often he is simultaneously providing a teaching about emptiness.

By recognizing the *Lotus Sutra* space under the ground as, in part, a metaphor for emptiness, Dōgen implies the study of emptiness as the study that activates the *Lotus Sutra* underground bodhisattvas. By encouraging the realization that, "in turning the Flower of Dharma . . . the Flower of Dharma . . . is

realized as downward [within the ground], and also realized as space [or emptiness]," he indicates the importance of his practitioner audience's own realization of the bodhisattvas as emerging from space, and also from emptiness.

Dōgen verifies the study of emptiness (or space) as the study that impels the bodhisattvas. The emergence from the *Lotus Sutra* itself is described as seeing the identity of earth and space, which could represent the immanence of emptiness and of the awakened realm as nondualistically present right in the ground of this world of particulars. The view of the earth or ground implied by Dōgen in these meanings provides a distinctly different, positive view of the earth from the negative interpretation of this earth as an obstacle, which had been given by Daosheng in China, with the obstruction to awakening from the earth's dust or sense objects.

It may be noted that Dōgen's interpretation of the open space under the ground of the emerging bodhisattvas as, in part, related to emptiness teaching is not orthodox to *Lotus Sutra* teaching. Gene Reeves comments:

> Some interpreters of the *Lotus Sutra* may prefer to think that this use of the idea of a space below the earth is really a symbolic reference to the popular Mahayana Buddhist idea of emptiness. They could be right about this. But the *Lotus Sutra* is not much concerned with the term "emptiness," using it in a positive sense only very few times. So it seems to be unlikely that it is what is behind this story. What this story wants to affirm, I believe, is not the reality of emptiness, but the reality and importance of this world, this world of suffering, a world that is, after all, Shakyamuni Buddha's world.[35]

Reeves is quite correct that the *Lotus Sutra* itself is not concerned with emptiness teaching, nor are most of its traditional followers. But there is no question that Dōgen himself was playing with that meaning of kū, as evidenced, for example, by his reference to the "Heart Sutra" and in the "Flowers of Space" ("Kūge") essay, discussed next. But Reeves is also certainly accurate that the main import of this story, for the sutra itself but also for Dōgen, as we will see, is "the reality and importance of this world, this world of suffering . . . Shakyamuni Buddha's world."

The double meaning of kū (空) as both space and emptiness is featured elsewhere in Dōgen's writings. A prominent example is his 1243 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Flowers of Space" ("Kūge"), which might be read as "Flowers in the Sky" (as kū can equally mean sky) and also as "Flowers of Emptiness" or the "Flowering of Space" or "Flowering of Emptiness," depending on the context in various

parts of the essay.[36] There, too, Dōgen gives a positive spin to space, although the phrase *kūge* is usually a negative image for delusory obstructions. The essay circles around a quote from the *Śūrangama Sūtra* in which Śākyamuni Buddha says, "It is like a person who has clouded eyes, seeing flowers in space. If the sickness of clouded eyes is cured, flowers vanish in space."[37] The conventional Buddhist understanding of this statement is that our eyes are clouded by our karmic obstructions, so we do not see clearly. We see flowers in the sky, which is also a common idiom for cataracts. With cataracts we cannot see clearly because of the veils over our eyes, and we see delusory flowers in the sky, or in space.

Flowers in space, or the flowering of emptiness, also might easily be interpreted as Dōgen referring to the flowering of Dharma in the *Lotus Sutra*. The *Lotus Sutra* is most often called the *Hokke-kyō* in Japanese, which more literally and appropriately would be translated as the *Dharma Flower Sutra*.[38] So the key phrase and title of this essay "Flowers of Space" might well include the connotation of the *Dharma Flower Sutra* in the sky. Indeed, the whole middle of the sutra after the appearance in chapter 11 of the stūpa of the Buddha Prabhūtaratna that emerges from the earth and floats in midair, including chapters 15 and 16 and through the remaining presence of the underground bodhisattvas up through chapter 22, is commonly referred to as "the assembly in the sky." Thus the main image in the essay "Flowers of Space" refers to flowers and the flowering of sky, space, and emptiness, with all those overtones, and also includes the sutra of the Dharma flower, or lotus. The essay cannot be fully translated with any one of these readings alone.

That Dōgen had the *Lotus Sutra* in mind as he wrote "Flowers of Space" is evidenced when he quotes chapter 16 of the sutra. After saying that nirvāṇa and life and death are simply the flowering of space (or perhaps the Lotus flower of space), he cites Śākyamuni: "It is best to see the triple world as the triple world." This occurs in the sutra when Śākyamuni avows to his startled disciples that he is speaking the truth about his inconceivable life span.[39] This implies (among other possible interpretations; see note) appreciation of the space of the triple world and its suchness, seen exactly as flowers in the sky or the flowering of space.

Dōgen's comments throughout this essay characteristically turn upside-down the conventional understanding that flowers in space are obstructions like cataracts that block our clear seeing. Near the beginning, before citing the passage from the *Śūrangama Sūtra*, he says:

> There are the flowers in space of which the World-Honored One speaks. Yet people of small knowledge and small experience do not

> know of the colors, brightness, petals, and flowers of flowers in space, and they can scarcely even hear the words, "flowers in space." Remember, in Buddhism there is talk of flowers in space. In non-Buddhism, they do not even know, much less understand, this talk of flowers in space. Only the buddhas and ancestors know the blooming and falling of flowers in space and flowers on the ground, only they know the blooming and falling of flowers in the world, only they know that flowers in space, flowers on the ground, and flowers in the world are sutras. This is the standard for learning the state of buddha, because flowers in space are the vehicle upon which the buddha ancestors ride. The Buddhist world and all the buddhas' teachings are just flowers in space.[40]

Although flowers in space are conventionally an image of delusion and nonreality, Dōgen affirms that all the buddhas' teachings and sutras are flowers in space, or more positively, the flowering of space, and of the ground and the world. The supposedly illusory space flowers are exactly where buddhas teach: "the vehicle upon which the buddhas ride." And also the Buddhist scriptures are flowers of space. This seeming paradox is in full accord with the Mahāyāna principle, enunciated in *Lotus Sutra* chapter 2, of buddhas appearing precisely for the sake of awakening beings from the delusions and afflictions of the mundane world.

Dōgen turns the conventional image for delusion totally upside down: "Bodhi, nirvāṇa, the Dharma-body, selfhood, and so on, are two or three petals of five petals opened by a flower in space."[41] Then he quotes Śākyamuni Buddha saying, "It is like a person who has clouded eyes seeing flowers in space; if the sickness of clouded eyes is cured, flowers vanish in space."

Dōgen says, "Because [scholars] do not know flowers in space, they do not know a person who has clouded eyes, do not see a person who has clouded eyes, do not meet a person who has clouded eyes, and do not become a person who has clouded eyes. Through meeting a person who has clouded eyes, we should know flowers in space and should see flowers in space. When we have seen flowers in space, we can also see *flowers vanish in space*."[42] He is talking not just about space, but about the "flowering of space," and of the Dharma. Zazen and the whole Buddhist project is simply a flower in space and the flowering of space, or the Dharma flower vanishing into space. This is typical of Dōgen's sense of humor and his play with his readers' usual understandings, even the usual understandings of Buddhist scholars and teachers. It is exactly amid space flowering that buddhas awaken and produce more space flowers.

Dōgen here profoundly reaffirms the reality of nonduality. Usually nonduality is considered opposed to duality, to be about transcending duality and discriminating mind, seeing through the dualities of form and emptiness, this and that, good and bad, right and wrong, all of the conventional dualistic illusions. But in his discussion of the flowers of space, he is clearly talking about the nonduality of duality and nonduality, not about merely transcending the duality of form and emptiness. This deeper nonduality is not the opposite of duality, but the synthesis of duality and nonduality, with both included and both seen as ultimately not separate, but integrated. In the flowering of space of the buddhas' teaching, "space" is our activity and life, the dialectical synthesis of form and emptiness.

Dōgen proclaims in "Flowers of Space," "People who understand that flowers in space are not real but other flowers are real are people who have not seen or heard the Buddha's teaching."[43] He is saying yes to everything, and cutting through duality and nonduality, to point to the ontological and cosmological awakening of the natural world and the impact of space itself.

Dōgen ends the "Flowers of Space" essay by bringing the flowers in the sky, seen as the nondual flowering of space and emptiness, back together with the emergence of the *Lotus Sutra* bodhisattvas from the ground (although he does not speak of those bodhisattvas explicitly). He quotes a Chinese master who said that the flowering of space emerges from the ground. Dōgen complains that ordinary teachers, "when discussing flowers in space as 'flowers of emptiness,' speak only of arising in emptiness and passing into emptiness. None has understood reliance on space; how much less could any understand reliance on the ground."[44] Dōgen here proclaims space and the ground as significant, reliable sources for the work of awakening. "Flowers of Space" ends with the statement, "The flowering of space exists based on emerging from the earth, and the whole of earth exists based on the opening of flowers. Please know that the flowers of space cause both the earth and space to unfold."[45]

The Bodhisattva Leap within the Grounds

Dōgen does not quite make the following connecting pun explicit, but it will help elucidate the conclusion to "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower." As Ricoeur suggests, we might further follow Dōgen's hermeneutic lead in creative interpretation, his active turning of the Dharma Flower through playful pursuit of metaphors. Thus we may follow the double meaning of kū (空) as "space" and "emptiness," and note that the "ground," *chi* (地), in the

"open space under the ground," is also the Chinese character used for *bhūmi*, the Sanskrit word for the stages or grounds in the system of the ten stages of bodhisattva development, as expressed in the *Daśabhūmika Sūtra*.[46] This would imply that the underground bodhisattvas in chapter 15 of the *Lotus Sutra* emerge through their immediate insight into the emptiness of all bhūmis, or stages. These bodhisattvas, diligently practicing in the open space, or with the emptiness, under or within the ground, would thus be ever ready to immediately emerge and benefit beings in any future evil age. This is so thanks to their seeing into the ultimate emptiness of all systems of progressive cultivation and the unmediated emptiness of any and each particular stage or position in such systems, even while they might be fully engaging the practices at some particular stage.

Springing forth from the "open space under the ground" could be glossed linguistically as the leap "from the space of emptiness inside the bhūmis." This reading is congruent with the recent interpretation of the *Lotus Sutra* by Jan Nattier (mentioned in chapter 1), based on writings by Karl Potter about Indian approaches to the spiritual path characterized as "leap philosophies" and "progress philosophies."[47] Nattier theorizes that the *Lotus Sutra* embodies the leap that characterizes most East Asian Mahāyāna philosophy, as opposed to the myriad lifetimes of self-sacrificing practice accepted by much of Indo-Tibetan Mahāyāna practice and its gradual "progress" philosophy of the spiritual path.

The interpretation of the abode of the underground bodhisattvas as the emptiness underlying all stages implies that this story embodies the leap out of the realm of systematized stages of accomplishment in practice, based on insight into the fundamental emptiness of all the stages and of all specific sites or grounds. This reading and interpretation also accounts for the startling "otherness" to the members of the Buddha's regular assembly of the bodhisattvas springing out from under the ground.

Nattier describes a modern reenactment of the *Lotus Sutra* disciples' consternation in chapter 15 in a class she taught at Indiana University that included the *Lotus Sutra*. One of the students was a young, accomplished Tibetan monk, holder of a Geshe degree, the monastic equivalent to a doctorate, who was steeped in the teachings of the long lifetimes of practice necessary to the bodhisattva path. But he was unfamiliar with the *Lotus Sutra*, which is not studied much in Tibetan Buddhism. He became baffled, even shocked, as they went over the *Lotus Sutra* text in class. Finally, one day in class after examining "promises that even a child who makes an offering to the Buddha will become enlightened, and the exhortations to put one's faith

in the sutra itself—he simply shook his head in amazement and exclaimed, 'I can't believe the Buddha would *say* such things!'"[48]

Recalling Ricoeur's sense of metaphor as a basis for interpretation, the *Lotus Sutra* story's initial image of bodhisattvas emerging from the open space under the ground can be read as a metaphor for the spiritual leap out of the emptiness inherent in all positions on the spiritual path. Based on their insight into emptiness, and into the total and mutual interconnectedness of all particulars, the story is claiming that the bodhisattvas can leap free from any stage or ground of being into the possibility of buddhahood in this body and mind. The teaching of attaining buddhahood in this very body and mind, *sokushin jōbutsu* in Japanese, was espoused by great Japanese Buddhist religious founders such as Saichō, Kūkai, and Nichiren, all influenced by the *Lotus Sutra*.[49] Dōgen clarifies his understanding as *sokushin zebutsu*, this very body and mind as buddha, letting go of ideals of attainment.[50]

The *Lotus Sutra* thus can be seen as the dividing line in Buddhist history and theology between a praxis of long rigorous cultivation, as for example in much of Tibetan Mahāyāna practice, and the possibility of a praxis based on the leap into the underlying omnipresent awakening. Through the use of wordplay as espoused by Ricoeur, the underground bodhisattvas' emergence can be interpreted as the metaphoric image of this divide and opening.

Thus the scene at the beginning of chapter 15, and the emergence of the innumerable bodhisattvas, aptly coincides with the juncture in the *Lotus Sutra* that has been considered the commencement of the sutra's "fruit" of the practice and the "origin teaching," dating back to Daosheng and Zhiyi. Such a leap out of lifetimes of practice through insight into emptiness certainly matches Dōgen's statement near the conclusion to "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," which celebrates the ultimate nonduality of being turned by the Dharma Flower or turning the Dharma Flower, "which is really just the Flower of Dharma turning the Flower of Dharma."[51] Dōgen expresses that conclusion right after clarifying that the reality of the Lotus teaching is not bound by the traditional lifetimes and stages of practice: "Do not see this turning the Flower of Dharma only as the bodhisattva-way practiced in the past. . . . How joyful it is! From kalpa to kalpa is the Flower of Dharma, and from noon to night is the Flower of Dharma. Because the Flower of Dharma is from noon to night, even though our own body-and-mind grows strong and grows weak, it is just the Flower of Dharma itself."[52] Here Dōgen proclaims how the Dharma flower simply can be constantly celebrated, regardless of, and right in the midst of, the flow of conditions and throughout the variety of practice approaches. But along with Dōgen's view of earth's spaciousness and

emptiness, this conclusion obviously involves the dimension of time and its relationship to Buddha's enduring life span, to which we now turn.

The Inconceivable Life Span and Dōgen Time

In the first passage cited earlier from "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," after referencing ground and space, Dōgen turns to "the Time of the Flower of Dharma" and the revelation of the Buddha's vast life span as "the one Time in which the Buddha is living," a striking, evocative phrase. Referring to this ultimate time outside of our conventional time, and reaffirming Śākyamuni's teaching relationship to the underground bodhisattvas disclosed in the sutra, Dōgen says that, "inevitably, the father is young and the son is old." Given his poetical style of rhetoric, Dōgen's interpretations often require his readers' own reinterpretation. The father being younger than the son appears to be for Dōgen an expression of the ephemeral and multidimensional aspect of time, hidden by our conventional time sense, and perhaps revealed by our shifting perspectives on time in time.

An example of this inevitable shift in temporal perspective may be seen in Bob Dylan's line about looking back at his own youth: "I was so much older then; I'm younger than that now."[53] This open, multidirectional, ultimate *Lotus Sutra* buddha time, within which the variability of our own limited time frames are set, is important to Dōgen, as in his injunction in the culmination of "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" passage, "We should realize the one Time in which the Buddha is living."

Dōgen's view of time is most fully elaborated in his 1240 *Shōbōgenzō* essay, "Being Time" ("Uji"), much celebrated in modern Dōgen studies.[54] This essay presents a complex vision of time as multidirectional, dynamic, and not separate from or independent of the actual existence, activity, and awareness of each particular being. "Being Time" does not directly cite the inconceivable life span from *Lotus Sutra* chapter 16. A full exploration of the complexity of Dōgen's whole philosophy of time is not the point here, but Dōgen's many references to Śākyamuni's inconceivable life span, and its sustained time frame as vitally present in the current time of wholehearted practice, are fully compatible and even illuminating of the quality of all time as present in the being-time that is expounded in "Being Time."

Dōgen elaborates on the reference to young and old fathers and sons in another essay that focuses on the *Lotus Sutra*, his 1243 *Shōbōgenzō* essay, "The Triple World Is Mind Only" ("Sangai-Yuishin"): "Sometimes a father is old and

a child is young; sometimes a father is old and a child is old; and sometimes a father is young and a child is young. One who imitates the maturity of a father is not being a child, and one who does not pass through the immaturity of childhood will not be a father. . . . All such children—'my children' and 'childlike me's' [*sic*]—are true heirs of the compassionate father Śākyamuni. . . . The point of the Tathāgata's words is only to speak of 'my children.'"[55] Here Dōgen uses the time frame of Śākyamuni as teacher of the seemingly much older underground bodhisattvas to discuss the inclusion of all beings, regardless of their level of spiritual maturity, as children of the Buddha, and the potential of all beings as themselves developing buddhas.

Dōgen discusses the Buddha's life span and the teaching of the venerable underground bodhisattvas as children of Buddha not only in the realm of sutras, but he also applies it to the Zen transmitted lineage of buddha ancestors. The metaphor of all devotees and practitioners as Buddha's children is common in Buddhism, with the image of the Buddhist order as an alternative, other family. But Dōgen characteristically gives it another turning. In his discussion of the document of heritage, *shishō*, used in the Zen Dharma transmission ceremony, Dōgen says that the seven primordial buddhas inherited their Dharma from Śākyamuni, and quotes Śākyamuni as saying, "All buddhas of the past are disciples of myself, Shakyamuni Buddha."[56]

Here Dōgen echoes the *Lotus Sutra* Śākyamuni Buddha by treating Śākyamuni as radically transcending time, in some sense preceding all other, including all earlier buddhas. And yet Dōgen does not address this by employing a philosophical analysis of the Dharmakāya and other aspects of Buddha, as do Zhiyi and Nichiren (see chapter 3). After quoting Śākyamuni as saying that all buddhas of the past are his own disciples, Dōgen simply proclaims, "The right form of all buddhas is like this. To see all buddhas, to inherit from all buddhas, to fulfill the way, is the buddha way of all buddhas."[57] Thus for Dōgen the bodies of buddhas of all times are informed by the inconceivability of the life span of Śākyamuni.

The Enduring Presence of Buddha

In the *Shōbōgenzō* essay "The Awesome Presence [or Dignified Manner] of Active Buddhas" ("Gyōbutsu Īgi") from 1241 (the year after "Being Time" and the same year as "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower"), Dōgen discusses the *īgi* (威儀), the majestic, dignified, or awesome bearing, manner, or presence of buddhas active or actually practicing in the world. The character *gyō* (行), "active" or "practicing," describing these buddhas is the same

used in the names of the leaders of the underground bodhisattvas who emerge in *Lotus Sutra* chapter 15: Superior Conduct, Boundless Conduct, Pure Conduct, and Steadfast Conduct ("conduct" is another meaning of gyō). So this essay, "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas," might be seen as describing the manner or deportment in which Śākyamuni Buddha and the underground bodhisattvas remain present and active in the world.

Near the beginning of "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas" Dōgen says, "Know that buddhas in the buddha way do not wait for awakening. Active buddhas alone fully experience the vital process on the path of going beyond buddha."[58] Buddha remaining in the world does not wait passively for some future experience of buddhahood, but engages in awakening as an active process. "Buddha going beyond buddha" is an expression frequently used by Dōgen to describe the vitality of ongoing awakening that is not looking back to some past experience or remembrance of a previous awakened state or being.[59]

Shortly after this passage, Dōgen quotes Śākyamuni describing his long life span in chapter 16: "In the past I practiced the bodhisattva way, and so have attained this long lifespan, still now unexhausted, covering vast numbers of years." Dōgen comments:

> You should know that it is not that the lifespan of the bodhisattva has continued without end only until now or not that the lifespan of the Buddha has prevailed only in the past, but that what is called *vast numbers* is a total inclusive attainment. What is called *still now* is the total lifespan. Even if *in the past I practiced* is one solid piece of iron ten thousand miles long, it hurls away hundreds of years vertically and horizontally.
>
> This being so, practice-realization is neither existence nor beyond existence. Practice-realization is not defiled. Although there are hundreds, thousands, and myriad [practice-realizations] in a place where there is no buddha and no person, practice-realization does not defile active buddhas.[60]

Dōgen uses the story of the Buddha's life span to support his often expressed view of the immanent, pure unity of practice-realization. The inconceivable life span becomes a symbol for Dōgen of the ongoing present being-time. This is not an abstract time frame belonging to an esoteric realm of buddhas, but a way of expressing Dōgen's view of time as the actuality of nondual awakening and active practice in the concrete, present context.

Dōgen refers to a story he cites frequently about the Chinese master Nanyue Huairang (677–744; Nangaku Ejō in Japanese) asserting to his teacher,

the Sixth Ancestor Huineng (who is also featured in "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower"), that practice-realization cannot be defiled. Huineng responds that this is exactly what is "attentively maintained by all buddhas," which Dōgen equates in this essay with the awesome presence of the active buddha.[61] Dōgen then proclaims, "What is attentively maintained by active buddhas, and what is thoroughly mastered by active buddhas is like this. . . . Although the everyday activities of active buddhas invariably allow buddhas to practice, active buddhas allow everyday activities to practice. This is to abandon your body for dharma, to abandon dharma for your body. This is to give up holding back your life, to hold on fully to your life."[62] The phrase "give up holding back your life" is from the closing verse of chapter 16 of the sutra when Śākyamuni says that for beings who are intent on seeing Buddha, not holding back or hesitating to even give their lives, then the Buddha and his assembly appear on Vulture Peak.[63] For Dōgen, the enduring life of Śākyamuni is realized by those who fully give their vitality to the everyday activities of buddhas' practice.

A little further in this lengthy essay, Dōgen reaffirms the importance of the enduring presence and vitality of buddhas of the earth or land and of the *Lotus Sutra*, or the blossoming of lotuses themselves. He says, "That which allows one corner of a buddha's awesome presence is the entire universe, the entire earth, as well as the entirety of birth and death, coming and going, of innumerable lands, and lotus blossoms."[64]

Later in this essay he proclaims that buddhas do not appear only in human realms, but in other realms or worlds as well. He mentions a story that is attributed to his teacher, Tiantong Rujing (1163–1228; Tendō Nyojō in Japanese), that after Śākyamuni received transmission of the true Dharma from the prehistorical Buddha Kāśyapa, Śākyamuni went to the Tuṣita Heaven to teach, and still abides there. Dōgen comments, "Śākyamuni of the human realm spread the teaching through his manifestation of parinirvāṇa, but Śākyamuni of the heavenly realm still abides there, teaching devas."[65] This is an extraordinary claim in terms of conventional Mahāyāna mythology, and also an unusual, playful interpretation of the inconceivable life span in *Lotus Sutra* chapter 16.

In the usual Mahāyāna cosmology, all buddhas abide in the Tuṣita heavenly realm while they are waiting to take birth in the world as buddhas. At this time, in the current buddha field of Śākyamuni, the bodhisattva Maitreya, who is predicted to be born as the next future incarnate, nirmāṇakāya Buddha, is said to be sitting in the Tuṣita Heaven, waiting patiently for his chance at buddhahood as he contemplates how to save all suffering beings.[66] Maitreya is also the figure in chapters 15 and 16 of the *Lotus Sutra* who questions

Śākyamuni on behalf of all his regular disciples about the emerging underground bodhisattvas and about Śākyamuni's claims about his inconceivable life span. But in this comment in "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas," Dōgen has Śākyamuni usurp Maitreya's place in Tuṣita Heaven, calmly abiding and teaching heavenly beings.

Dōgen seems to imply that Śākyamuni has indeed passed away into parinirvāṇa in the human realm, his life span enduring only in the heavenly realm. But as the essay proceeds, Dōgen proclaims that it is equally impossible with the limitations of either mere human or heavenly faculties to understand or "make calculations about the awesome presence of active buddhas."[67] For the enduring, active Buddha, coming and going through the Tuṣita Heaven is no different from being immersed in the smelly defilements of the common world: "Active buddhas are free from obstruction as they penetrate the vital path of being splattered by mud and soaked in water."[68]

Later in this essay Dōgen discusses the saying by Xuefeng Yicun (822–908; Seppō Gison in Japanese), "Buddhas in the past, present, and future abide in flames and turn the great dharma wheel,"[69] another image for the practice of buddhas immersed in the suffering of the world. Dōgen comments, "Flames are the great practice place of all buddhas turning the dharma wheel." He adds, "If you try to assess this with the measurements of realms, times, human capacity, or ordinary or sacred, you cannot hit the mark. . . . As they are called all buddhas in the three times, they go beyond these measurements."[70]

Dōgen goes on to quote Śākyamuni from chapter 11 of the *Lotus Sutra*: "To expound this *Lotus Sutra* is to see me."[71] So those who sustain the expounding of the sutra are maintaining Buddha's life span. Then Dōgen adds a following quote from the sutra: "After I pass away, to listen to and to accept this sutra, and to inquire into its meaning will be quite difficult."[72] But in his "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas" commentary, Dōgen uses this quote to indicate that simply listening to and accepting the sutra is sustaining Buddha's life span, equally to expounding the Dharma: "Know that it is equally difficult to listen to and accept this sutra. Expounding and listening are not a matter of superior or inferior. . . . All buddhas of the three times remain and listen to dharma. As the fruit of buddhahood is already present, they do not listen to dharma to achieve buddhahood, [but] are already buddhas."[73] So buddhas who are listening to the Dharma also "do not wait for awakening."

Near the end of this essay, Dōgen offers a striking image for the persistence of the Buddha's teaching through time: "Although this moment is distant from the sages, you have encountered the transforming guidance of the

spreading sky that can still be heard."[74] Here he indicates the persisting of the Dharma in time as integrating with the pervading of "the spreading sky." So for Dōgen the buddha nature of the sky, or space itself, offers "transforming guidance" throughout the vastness of time.

In 1250, nine years after writing "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" and "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas," Dōgen gave a Dharma hall discourse, number 387, recorded in *Eihei Kōroku*, that cites the same story about Huineng and the *Lotus Sutra* used in "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" to strikingly emphasize the importance of the persisting presence of buddhas in the world. In this discourse, after citing the story about Huineng and the monk who had memorized the *Lotus Sutra*, Dōgen quotes Huineng saying, "The essential point of this sutra concerns the causes and conditions for [buddhas] appearing in the world." Huineng's statement refers to the single great cause from chapter 2 of the *Lotus Sutra*, that buddhas appear in order to lead beings to the way to awakening.

Dōgen then declares, "I would say that the essential point of this sutra concerns all buddhas appearing in the world."[75] This only subtly different statement emphasizes simply the importance of the fact of buddhas being present, appearing in the world, rather than the single great cause referred to by Huineng. For Dōgen, this enduring presence of Buddha from the story of Buddha's inconceivable life span is exactly the point of the whole sutra. In this short Dharma hall discourse, Dōgen then tells his monks not to say that his and Huineng's statements are the same, but also not to say that they are different.

Dōgen Facing Buddha's Parinirvāṇa

While Dōgen utilizes the story of the Buddha's inconceivable life span to express his teaching, he simultaneously shares some of Myōe's mournful yearning for Śākyamuni, along with Saigyō's aesthetic celebration of Buddha's continuing presence in the wonders of the natural world (seen, for example, in the Dharma hall discourse above, which so moved Tettsū Gikai).

As throughout his more celebrated masterwork, *Shōbōgenzō*, Dōgen references the *Lotus Sutra* very frequently in his other major work, *Eihei Kōroku*, which consists in large part of his later teachings given in formal jōdōs while training his monk disciples at Eiheiji. Many of these Dharma hall discourses were given at ceremonial dates in the Buddhist calendar, including New Year's Day and the winter solstice, but also the traditional days for

commemorating Śākyamuni Buddha's birthday and his passing away into parinirvāṇa, known as Nirvāṇa Day. In six of the seven Nirvāṇa Day Dharma hall discourses that appear in *Eihei Kōroku*, Dōgen either directly references the inconceivable life span story, or in some other way plays with the tension between his own sadness at the passing of Śākyamuni and his realization and creative interpretation of Śākyamuni as alive and present based on the *Lotus Sutra* story in chapter 16.

The yearning for Buddha, while still realizing Śākyamuni's abiding presence, is perhaps most poignantly expressed in Dharma hall discourse number 486 in 1252 (Dōgen's last jōdō for this event before he succumbed to his own final illness later that year). Dōgen said, "This night Buddha entered nirvāṇa under the twin sāla trees, and yet it is said that he always abides on Vulture Peak. When can we meet our compassionate father? Alone and poor, we vainly remain in this world. . . . Amid love and yearning, what can this confused son do? I wish to stop these red tears, and join in wholesome action."[76] Dōgen knows that this "wholesome action" is itself one form of the continuing life of Śākyamuni, but still he is sad.

In Dharma hall discourse number 367, given to commemorate Nirvāṇa Day in 1250, Dōgen said, "All beings are sad with longing, and their tears overflow. Although we trust his words that he always resides on Vulture Peak, how can we not be sorry about the coldness of the twin sāla trees?"[77] Dōgen does not forget the enduring presence of the Buddha described in the *Lotus Sutra*, but he also honors the human sadness that Myōe had expressed.

In the Nirvāṇa Day Dharma hall discourse number 146 from 1246, Dōgen proclaims the identity of all buddhas and ancestors in and with Śākyamuni's passing away into parinirvāṇa: "Now our original teacher, Great Master Śākyamuni, is passing away, entering nirvāṇa. . . . Why is this only about Śākyamuni Buddha? All buddhas in the ten directions in the past, future, and present enter nirvāṇa tonight at midnight. . . . Those who do not enter nirvāṇa tonight at midnight are not buddha ancestors and are not capable of maintaining the teaching. Those who have already entered nirvāṇa tonight at midnight are capable of maintaining the teaching."[78] Here Dōgen plays further with the story of Buddha's inconceivable life span by indicating that Buddha persists, with and as all buddhas, precisely in his passing away into parinirvāṇa. The willingness to pass away for the sake of those who would benefit, or simply to face human mortality, is exactly Buddha's enduring life.

Later in this Dharma hall discourse, Dōgen quotes chapter 16 of the *Lotus Sutra* directly: "With full exertion lift up this single stone, and call it the lifespan of as many ages as the atoms in five hundred worlds."[79] The image here is of a stone that is placed as one move in the game Go. Thus passing away is

a simple skillful means of an inconceivably long-lived buddha, and simultaneously the full exertion of life and death.

The creative tension for Dōgen between Buddha's historic absence and his spiritual presence, enduring by virtue of dedicated practice and hermeneutic insight, is apparent in all of the Nirvāṇa Day jōdōs, but is perhaps most clearly articulated in Dharma hall discourse number 225 in 1247. Dōgen says therein, "If you say Śākyamuni is extinguished you are not his disciple. If you say he is not extinguished, your words do not hit the mark. Having reached this day, how do you respond? Do you want to see the Tathāgata's life vein? Offer incense, make prostrations, and return to the monks' hall [for meditation]."[80] Dōgen recognizes the same distance from the historical Śākyamuni in both space and time that Myōe feels. But Dōgen has appropriated the *Lotus Sutra* story of emerging bodhisattvas and the long-lived Buddha to experience and express the awakening presence right in the practice within the space of his mountain monastery in thirteenth-century Echizen, Japan.

The Emerging Bodhisattvas and the Life Span as Practice Encouragements

A number of Dōgen's references to chapter 16 show his interpretative play with the fundamental meaning of the persisting life span of the Buddha. The relatively brief 1244 *Shōbōgenzō* essay, "The Tathāgata's Whole Body" ("Nyōrai Zenshin"), describes the wholeness of the Buddha's body completely through the use of references to the *Lotus Sutra*. Dōgen mentions the Buddha's life span after equating the sutra itself and the entire phenomenal world with the totality of the Buddha's body: "The sutra is the whole body of the Tathāgata. . . . The mark of reality of all things in the present time is the sutra."[81] Thus Dōgen relates the sutra and the whole of reality itself to this enduring Śākyamuni, whose "life span resulting from the merits of the original bodhisattva practices is not limited in size by even such things as the size of the universe. It transcends this limit; it is limitless. This is the whole body of the Tathāgata, it is this sutra."[82]

One major significance of this long life span is that Buddha is still continuing his beneficial practice and teaching. Dōgen immediately follows the preceding reference to the essence of the sutra (and reality itself) as Buddha's long life span with a quotation from the Devadatta chapter of the *Lotus Sutra*: "For countless eons Śākyamuni has practiced difficult and painful practices, accumulated merits, and sought the Way of the bodhisattva, and thus even though he is now a Buddha, he still practices diligently."[83] Dōgen emphasizes

the ongoing nature and power of the Buddha's practice together with his long life.

Historically, Śākyamuni Buddha continued his meditation practice after his complete awakening throughout his historical lifetime. But even now, Dōgen implies, the Buddha's practice continues through his current followers, whose practice Dōgen thus strongly encourages. His essay "The Tathāgata's Whole Body" concludes, "The long eons of difficult and painful practices are the activity of the womb of the Buddha. . . . When it is said that these practices have not ceased even for a second, it means that even though he is perfectly enlightened, he still practices vigorously, and he continues forever even though he converts the whole universe. This activity is the whole body of the Tathāgata."[84] Dōgen begins this passage by referring to the Tathāgata garbha, or womb of Buddha, discussed in chapter 2 as a hermeneutical standard for encouraging awakening practice. For Dōgen the significance of the enduring Śākyamuni is not merely that Buddha is immanent in the world, but that his vigorous, inspiring practice continues and "converts the whole universe." This is description, but also prescription, and thus it is incumbent on Buddha's descendants, and Dōgen's students, to continue Buddha's practice.

Dōgen further turns the meaning of the Buddha's life span in the 1244 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Awakening to the Bodhi-Mind" ("Hotsu Bōdaishin"), in which he discusses *bodhicitta*, the first arousal of the thought of universal awakening, which he considers of utmost importance, mysterious, and in some sense equivalent to the whole of a buddha's enlightenment. After quoting the Buddha's statement at the very end of chapter 16, "I have always given thought to how I could cause all creatures to enter the highest supreme Way and quickly become Buddhas," Dōgen comments, "This [statement] is the Tathāgata's lifetime itself. Buddhas' establishment of the mind, training, and experience of the effect are all like this."[85] For Dōgen the inconceivable life span is exactly this intention to help all beings awaken, which mysteriously creates the ongoing life of the Buddha. As long as this vow and direction to universal awakening persists in the world and has the potential to spring forth in current practitioners, Dōgen sees that the Buddha is alive.

Dōgen again uses the teaching of Śākyamuni's life span as a direct incitement to wholehearted practice in the 1243 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Meeting Buddha" ("Kenbutsu"), which includes several references to the *Lotus Sutra*. In one, Dōgen quotes chapter 16's discussion of the Buddha's appearing to be born, awaken, and pass away as merely a skillful means, and the Buddha's statement

that when beings with unified or "undivided mind, desire to meet buddha, without attaching to their own body and life," at that time he appears with the assembly at Vulture Peak and expounds the *Lotus Sutra*. Dōgen comments, "When each present individual secretly arouses the desire to meet buddha, we are desiring to meet buddha through concentration of the Vulture Peak Mind. So the undivided mind is Vulture Peak itself. And how could the undivided body not appear together with the mind?"[86]

Thus the whole of the *Lotus Sutra* and the inconceivable life span of Śākyamuni is also an embodiment of the wholehearted, single-minded practice Dōgen advocates in his instructions for zazen, or sitting meditation. Throughout his references to the enduring Śākyamuni, Dōgen uses the story as an encouragement to celebrate the importance of ongoing dedicated practice. In "Meeting Buddha" he equates the Buddha's extraordinary life span with the undivided wholeheartedness of single-minded practice. Rather than the Nichiren veneration of a symbolic object and mantra as an embodiment, Dōgen promotes meditative practice as a physical, ritual enactment and expression of the enduring Buddha.

Dōgen often emphasizes that the purpose of practice is not to obtain some future acquisition of awakening, but is the practice of enlightenment already present in the continuing presence of the living Buddha. His praxis of embodiment of awakening in this very body and mind, *sokushin zebutsu*, can be linked to his description of the enduring Śākyamuni as reality itself. Practice becomes the requisite ritual performance-enactment of an active faith in this awakened reality as already, and continually, being expressed and present in this conditioned world.

In *Eihei Kōroku* Dharma hall discourse number 182 from 1246, Dōgen specifically cites the underground bodhisattvas in chapter 15 of the *Lotus Sutra*, quoting Śākyamuni's saying that when they first saw his body and heard his teaching, they immediately accepted with faith and entered into the Tathāgata's wisdom. Dōgen then comments, "Having heard the Buddha's teaching is like already seeing the Buddha's body. When one first sees the Buddha's body, one naturally is able to accept it and have faith, and enter the Tathāgata's wisdom. Furthermore, seeing Buddha's body with your ears, hearing Buddha's preaching with your eyes, and similarly for all six sense objects, is also like entering and residing in Buddha's house, and entering buddhahood and arousing the vow, exactly the same as in the ancient vow, without any difference."[87] Dōgen uses the quote about the underground bodhisattvas' training and faith in Buddha to encourage faith and acceptance of buddha wisdom in the actual experience of his own disciples. This implies that not only the

Buddha's inconceivable life span, but also the enduring helpful work of the underground bodhisattvas in future ages are actually accomplished for Dōgen through the dedicated practice of current practitioners.

In another reference to the *Lotus Sutra* bodhisattvas springing from underground, in his 1240 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Sounds of the Valley Streams; Colors of the Mountains" ("Keisei Sanshoku"), Dōgen discusses the searching for insight and guidance by beginning practitioners, who seek "to tread the path of the ancient saints. At this time, in visiting teachers and seeking the truth, there are mountains to climb and oceans to cross. While we are seeking a guiding teacher, or hoping to find a good spiritual friend, one comes down from the heavens, or springs out from the earth."[88] He cites the bodhisattvas emerging from the ground as an encouragement, explicitly referring to the story's promise that these bodhisattvas will remain available to continue the Lotus teaching throughout the future. He furthermore indicates the presence of the underground bodhisattvas springing from the earth in the persons of present seekers and practitioners.

Dōgen repeatedly uses the story of the bodhisattvas' emergence from the earth and Śākyamuni's ongoing presence as an encouragement to dedicated practice, equating the Buddha's extraordinary life span with the undivided wholeheartedness of single-minded practice in all aspects of everyday activity. Genryū Kagamishima comments that for Dōgen, "The meaning of any distinction between the *Lotus Sutra* and all other things vanishes. . . . All other things become sutras whose purpose is to expound the ultimate truth of the Dharma flower [sutra]. [In order to expound the sutra,] the sounds of valley streams and the colors of mountains become the mountains and water sutra of the Dharma flower, drinking tea and eating rice become the tea-drinking sutra of the Dharma flower, [all] enjoying the transformative benefits of the Dharma flower."[89]

Dōgen promotes meditative practice extending into all mundane functions as a physical, ritual embodiment and expression of this enduring Buddha. He also emphasizes that the purpose of practice is not to obtain some future acquisition of awakening, but is the practice of enlightenment already present in the continuing presence of the Buddha.

Conclusions: The Importance of the Story for Dōgen

The profusion of Dōgen's references to the *Lotus Sutra* and the story of the underground bodhisattvas and Śākyamuni's inconceivable life span expresses the importance to Dōgen of the sutra and of this story. The examples explored,

although hopefully providing a clear account of how Dōgen uses this story to reflect his worldview, are very far from a complete catalogue of every one of his references to this story. Another reference to chapter 16, not discussed earlier because it does not relate to Dōgen's worldview, is in the *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Home-leaving" ("Shukke"), written in 1246.[90]

In 1243 Dōgen left the Kyoto area and moved his community north to the remote mountains of Echizen Province (now Fukui). In 1244 he settled at Daibutsuji temple, which was renamed Eiheiji in 1246 and which remains one of the two headquarter temples of modern Sōtō Zen. Especially during the hardships of the first few years in Echizen, Dōgen sought to encourage his monk disciples by stressing the significance of home leaving and monk ordination. In "Home-leaving" he quotes a passage from chapter 16 about the life span of Buddha in which Śākyamuni says that as an expedient means for beings of only slight virtue he recounts the conventional story of his life, including his home leaving.[91] It is revealing of the great significance to Dōgen of the story of Buddha's life span that even in this context, Dōgen uses this quote to encourage home leaving to his monks.

It may be noted that the earlier citations to chapters 15 and 16 of the *Lotus Sutra* extend throughout Dōgen's teaching career, starting from "Sounds of the Valley Streams; Colors of the Mountains," written in 1240, and "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" and "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas" in 1241 (1239 being the beginning of the five-year period during which more than 80 percent of the dated *Shōbōgenzō* essays were written).[92] And, as has been discussed previously in this chapter and in chapter 1, Dōgen's proclamation of the awakening capacity of earth and space dates back to 1231 and his earliest significant writing, "Talk on Wholehearted Practice of the Way." His references to chapters 15 and 16 of the *Lotus Sutra* continue until the *Eihei Kōroku* Nirvāṇa Day Dharma hall discourse from 1252, the last year of his dated writings, and the undated "Taking Refuge in the Three Treasures" ("Kie Buppōsō-hō"), which is among the small number of *Shōbōgenzō* essays thought to have been written by Dōgen in his last few years.

Many other instances demonstrate Dōgen's high esteem for the *Lotus Sutra*. For a particularly significant example, in his mealtime liturgy Dōgen took the step of adding in "the Mahāyāna, Wondrous Dharma Lotus Flower Sutra" to the traditional chanted "ten names of Buddha," along with the primary buddhas and bodhisattvas in the Chinese list, which included the Dharmakāya, Saṃbhoghakāya, Nirmāṇakāya, and next future Buddha Maitreya, and the Bodhisattvas Mañjuśri, Samantabhadra, and Avalokiteśvara.[93] Furthermore, in one of his last poems, written in the remote mountains at Eiheiji temple, Dōgen rejoices, "I always read the Lotus Blossom Sutra." This

first of his "Fifteen Verses on Dwelling in the Mountains," verse 99 in the last volume of *Eihei Kōroku*, goes:

> How delightful, mountain dwelling so solitary and tranquil.
> Because of this I always read the Lotus Blossom Sutra.
> With wholehearted vigor under trees, what is there to love or hate?
> How enviable; sound of evening rains in deep autumn.[94]

A notable legend concerning the major role of the *Lotus Sutra* for Dōgen in his own deathwatch is recorded in the *Kenzeiki*, one of the earlier biographies of Dōgen (though not compiled until the fifteenth century, and not considered fully reliable by modern scholars). In this story, Dōgen named the house where he died in Kyoto (which belonged to Kakunen, one of his major lay disciples who was caring for him) the "*Lotus Sutra* Hermitage" (Myō-an). He is said to have spent his last few days there doing walking meditation around a pillar while reciting a passage from chapter 21 of the *Lotus Sutra*, "The Supernatural Powers of the Tathāgata," which Śākyamuni addresses directly to the bodhisattvas who had emerged from under the ground in chapter 15.[95] In this passage, the final sentences of the prose section before the final closing verse of the chapter, the Buddha says that wherever the sutra is kept, a stūpa should be erected and offerings given, and that in all these spaces buddhas awaken, turn the dharma wheel, and enter parinirvāṇa.[96]

We have seen that Dōgen employs his creative hermeneutics to interpret the *Lotus Sutra* story of the bodhisattvas arising from under the ground and the consequent revelation of Śākyamuni Buddha's inconceivable life span as expressions and representations of the pervasion of the sacred and of the enduring capacity for awakening throughout space and time. In the writings of Dōgen, the world expressed in the *Lotus Sutra* provides the context and import for bodhisattva practice. The open space of the realm of the underground bodhisattvas and the inconceivable life span of Buddha support a view of a present place and time that can function as a nondual and integrated realm of realization.

This world expressed by Dōgen using these *Lotus Sutra* stories might be seen as a variety of Pure Land, somewhat comparable in function to his contemporaries' visions of exalted realms, depicted by Nenbutsu followers and in the Tendai *hongaku*, or fundamental enlightenment, teachings. However, it is not a realm or realization that can be automatically bestowed without the active involvement of the Buddhist devotee/practitioner. Rather, this realm is realized through the active practice propounded by Dōgen, which is also the natural expression of his vision derived, at least to some substantial extent, from the *Lotus Sutra*.

5

Dōgen's View of Earth, Space, and Time Seen in Mahāyāna Context

In the spirit of Dōgen's own hermeneutic play, this chapter explores the Mahāyāna context for the views of earth, space, and time arising from Dōgen's references to the *Lotus Sutra* stories about the underground bodhisattvas' emergence and the Buddha's inconceivable life span. First, we again look at the practical importance of imagery in the Mahāyāna tradition, and for Dōgen, and how it often supersedes theoretical philosophical discourse. Then we consider a range of images and stories related to earth, to space, and then to temporality from other Buddhist contexts, all of which were either directly or indirectly significant influences for Dōgen. While Dōgen himself expresses his worldview most fully through references to the *Lotus Sutra*, as we have seen, the milieu of Japanese Buddhism in which he lived and was trained offered a variety of available resources for creatively envisioning earth, space, and time.

The Function of Mahāyāna Imagery and the Emerging Bodhisattvas

In attempting to present and describe the Mahāyāna vision of earth and space, and then of time, which are implicit in Dōgen's responses and in this pivotal *Lotus Sutra* story, it is not possible to reduce what is a complex, dynamic worldview to a single, static definition. Even if it were possible, from the explicit Mahāyāna priority

of eliciting practical responses for encouraging active entry into the path toward awakening, simply deriving such neat definitions would not be constructive. This chapter accordingly portrays a multifaceted range of suggestive outlooks related to earth, space, and time from the Mahāyāna context.

From the perspective of the authors of the *Lotus Sutra* and of Dōgen, the purpose of these cosmological views are not abstract, doctrinal, or philosophical, but rather practical and down to earth. Speaking as a *Lotus Sutra* scholar about the Buddha's inconceivable life span in chapter 16, Gene Reeves offers an interpretation of the meaning of the enduring Śākyamuni Buddha: "What does it mean to say that the Buddha is universal? Though some would take it to be so, this is not, I think, a metaphysical claim about some ultimate reality. . . . The purpose of the Dharma . . . is to lead people to act like buddhas, that is, to be doers of the bodhisattva way, and, in this sense, the wider purpose is to enable each of us to be the Buddha in the world for anyone to see."[1] Similar to this practical and liberative emphasis of the *Lotus Sutra*, Dōgen also expressed his worldview for the purpose of religious practice rather than as a philosophical standpoint. As Hee-Jin Kim says in his excellent work introducing Dōgen's thought and practice, "Dōgen was a religious thinker, not merely or even primarily a philosopher. . . . Dōgen's most philosophic moments were permeated by his practical, religious concern, against the background of which his philosophic activities stand out most clearly in their truest significance. What Dōgen presents to us is not a well-defined, well-knit philosophical system, but rather a loose nexus of exquisite mythopoeic imaginings and profound philosophic visions."[2] Both Dōgen and the *Lotus Sutra* are aiming at a praxis based on their multifaceted, lively worldview. The images and traditional contexts that follow are sources for the realms of earth, space, and time, which contribute to the evocative, imagistic worldview of Dōgen and the *Lotus Sutra*. Such images and metaphors are the material of Dōgen's "loose nexus of exquisite mythopoeic imaginings," and still may be relevant to the functioning of bodhisattva practice amid shifting contemporary concerns.

Before reviewing Dōgen's perspectives on earth, space, and time inspired by the *Lotus Sutra* in the light of the importance and function of Mahāyāna imagery, it is helpful to revisit the impact of the striking story of myriad bodhisattvas springing forth from the open space under the ground.

The *Lotus Sutra* is especially noted among Buddhist texts for containing a great many remarkable images, some from its celebrated parables. These memorable images include the children reluctant to leave the burning house in chapter 3 of the sutra; the prodigal son unwilling to claim his birthright until after years of menial labor in chapter 4; the nourishing Dharma rain

falling equally on all plants in chapter 5; in chapter 7 the illusory conjured city of nirvāṇa as a halfway house on the road to universal liberation; a beggar unaware of a priceless jewel sewn into his clothing in chapter 8; the stūpa of an ancient buddha floating in the sky over Vulture Peak in chapter 11; the eight-year-old daughter of a Nāga king achieving buddhahood as quickly as Śākyamuni can accept her offering in chapter 12 (in the Kumārajīva version); as well as arresting images in the second, "original teaching" half of the sutra, such as the Bodhisattva Regarder of the World's Cries (Avalokiteśvara) saving beings from a wide assortment of distresses in chapter 25 and the six-tusked magical white elephant of Samantabhadra in chapter 28.[3] And yet, with all of these remarkable images, the vast numbers of bodhisattvas suddenly emerging from the earth in chapter 15 remains for me among the most intriguing images in the sutra.

As discussed more fully in chapter 2 of this work, scholars have begun to examine the uses of imagery in the Mahāyāna Buddhist tradition. For such scholars, the practical import of images of earth, space, and time for Dōgen, and for the *Lotus Sutra*, seems more relevant to their liberative function than any of their explicit doctrinal statements. We begin with exploring the role of imagery of earth in Buddhist teachings, followed by imagery of space and of time.

Buddhist Earth Motifs: The Earth Witness Mudrā and Earth Spirits

The emergence of bodhisattvas from the earth recalls a number of other major Buddhist earth motifs. Each of these offers potential areas for further study. They are mentioned here briefly to provide the context for the perspectives of Dōgen and the *Lotus Sutra*. Primary to the story of Buddha's awakening is the image of the earth goddess said to have emerged from the ground to bear witness to Śākyamuni's buddhahood the night of his awakening under the bodhi tree. As the story goes, after trying various other methods of distraction, such as armies of attacking demons and seductive dancing girls, Māra, the spirit of temptation, attempted to unseat Śākyamuni by challenging his right to claim buddhahood. Thereupon Śākyamuni made the *mudrā*, the gesture of touching the earth with the fingertips of his right hand (*bhūmi sparśa mudrā* in Sanskrit), which is a common iconographic feature of Śākyamuni images.[4]

In response, the earth itself, in some renditions personified as an earth goddess, testified to his buddhahood. John Strong says that in some versions of the story "the earth is actually personified as a great goddess, Sthāvarā.

Emerging with the upper half of her body out of the ground, and accompanied by a whole throng of goddesses," she confirms the Buddha's awakening.[5] According to another version of the legend, by this gesture Śākyamuni obliged the gods or spirits of the earth "to swear him eternal fidelity."[6] But throughout Buddhism, the gesture of simply touching the earth has come to signify Buddha's awakening.

Dōgen does not mention the earth-witness mudrā directly in *Shōbōgenzō* or *Eihei Kōroku*, and earth spirits or an earth goddess may seem alien to many Westerners' views of Zen and its practical meditation techniques. However, Dōgen does honor earth spirits. In *Eihei Shingi*, the collection of Dōgen's Chinese writings about monastic and community standards first published together in the seventeenth century, he encourages and emphasizes the importance of venerating the earth spirits. In "Pure Standards for the Temple Administrators" ("Chiji Shingi"), the largest section of *Eihei Shingi*, he discusses the responsibilities of the various monastic positions, including the garden manager: "Morning and evening in the vegetable garden [the garden manager] must offer incense, do prostrations, chant, and recite dedications to Ryūten and Dōji, without ever becoming lazy or negligent."[7] Ryūten (龍天) is a heavenly spirit who helps manage weather conditions, essential to good harvests. Dōji (土地), literally "lands" or "ground," is an earth protector spirit who watches over the monastic grounds and buildings.

It is noteworthy that there is no mention of any earth spirit in the parallel "Chief Gardener" or "Director of the Farming Village" sections of Dōgen's primary Chinese Chan source for monastic regulations, which he frequently quotes verbatim, the *Chanyuan Qinggui* (Pure standards for the Chan garden; *Zen'en Shingi* in Japanese).[8] So Dōgen's reference to the earth spirit in this context may in part reflect native Japanese approaches to spirits, and to Mahāyāna bodhisattvas and teachings as situated and available on the earth. Certainly there are ample connections in Japanese Sōtō lore between Dōgen and native Japanese earth spirits, especially to the protector deity of Mount Hakusan near Dōgen's temple Eiheiji. The Hakusan deity is said to have given a variety of aid to Dōgen, including helping Dōgen copy the entire *Blue Cliff Record* on the night before his departure from China for Japan.[9]

In Japanese culture the *Lotus Sutra* has also been regarded as expressed in patterns on the earth itself. Allan Grapard, who has extensively studied East Asian sacred mountains, has shown how Buddhist teachings have been mapped onto landscape terrain. The Japanese volcano Futagoyama in Toyokuni Province, the original site of the Hachiman spirit in Kyūshū, was considered to be a manifestation of the *Lotus Sutra* text, with its twenty-eight valleys correlated with the sutra's twenty-eight chapters, and its paths "lined

with more than sixty thousand statues representing the total number of ideograms in the text."[10] In this way the earth itself becomes the text, and walking its paths one sees the natural landscape as an experience of the *Lotus Sutra* teaching. Grapard expresses the view that at this site, "the mountains are the Lotus Sutra; they are the body of the Buddha; the world is the realm of Awakening."[11]

The long connection between Dōgen's Sōtō lineage and the Hakusan spirit near Eiheiji has even led to recent speculation that Dōgen left Kyoto in 1243 to move to the remote northern Echizen region (where he founded Eiheiji) because of active support for him from Tendai Hakusan devotees in the Echizen area (rather than due to hostility or threats from the Kyoto religious establishment, the stereotypically speculated cause for his move).[12] It is likely that the early Sōtō temples in the generations right after Dōgen were intentionally built along geomantic lines in the earth associated with the Hakusan spirit.[13] For example, the important early Sōtō temples Hōkyōji in Echizen, founded by Dōgen's disciple Jakuen (1207–1299), and the temples Yōkōji and Sōjiji founded by Keizan in nearby Noto Peninsula, were sited on geomantic lines associated with Mount Hakusan.[14] Such attention to the earth may well reflect the enduring impact on his successors of Dōgen's teachings about the earth.

The Earth Womb and Space Womb Bodhisattvas and the Tathāgata garbha

Another major East Asian Mahāyāna earth motif appears in the figure of Jizō Bodhisattva (Kṣitigarbha in Sanskrit; Dizang in Chinese), whose name means "Earth Womb" or "Earth Storehouse."[15] Although not discussed directly by Dōgen, this bodhisattva was a standard part of the Mahāyāna pantheon in Dōgen's Kamakura period and remains among the most popular bodhisattva figure in Japan. Jizō is a protector whose vow to go down into the earth for the sake of beings in hell realms is described in the *Sutra of the Past Vows of Earth Store Bodhisattva*. In the sutra, four past lives of Jizō are related in which these previous persons vowed to alleviate the suffering of all beings in all six realms.[16] In the two most extended stories, the former lives of Jizō are women who go down into hell realms to save their mothers, and thereby save many other suffering hell beings.[17] As the Jizō figure has developed in popular folklore in China, and even more so in Japan, this bodhisattva functions archetypically as a witnessing presence, easing the suffering of those in hellish situations, or taking the place of those facing imminent threats.[18] Close to the

earth, Jizō is described as aiding farmers and other working people. He especially protects children and women and is a guide to all traveling in liminal, transitional spaces. Jizō's continuing popularity in Japan indicates the strong connection to the earth that endures in Mahāyāna imagination.

Jizō is closely related to Kokuzō Bodhisattva (Ākāśagarbha in Sanskrit; Xukongzang in Chinese), whose name means "Space Womb" or "Space Storehouse."[19] In early Japanese Buddhism, visualization and mantra dedication to Kokuzō were popular practices among mountain ascetics, and Kokuzō was especially important in the early practice of the Shingon founder Kūkai.[20] Jizō and Kokuzō images were sometimes enshrined together as bodhisattva attendants on either side of the Healing Buddha (Yakushi Nyōrai in Japanese; Bhaiṣajyaguru in Sanskrit), the focus of chapter 23 of the *Lotus Sutra*. A prominent Heian-period example of such a triad is in the lecture hall of the Kōryūji in Kyoto, best known for its famous image of the pensive Maitreya bodhisattva in its storehouse hall.

The relationship of Jizō and Kokuzō bodhisattvas implies a natural affinity between the earth and space elements in Japanese Mahāyāna imagery. The close correlation between earth and space in Dōgen's references to the *Lotus Sutra* story may be seen as a further expression of this relationship. Kokuzō was a significant figure to Dōgen's important disciple Tettsū Gikai, whose awakening experience after hearing a Dharma hall discourse from Dōgen about the earth's fertility imbued with the universal was mentioned in the previous chapter. At the end of Gikai's journey to China to research Chinese monastic forms after Dōgen's death, Gikai carved (or perhaps arranged to have carved) statues of Ākāśagarbha (Kokuzō) and Avalokiteśvara to protect him on the return journey.[21]

Gikai's successor, Keizan, who with his own successors popularized Sōtō Zen in the Japanese countryside, was also a devotee of Kokuzō.[22] Keizan had a triad of Ākāśagarbha and Avalokiteśvara images flanking Śākyamuni Buddha enshrined in his main temple, Yōkōji.[23] Such practices of Gikai, Keizan, and their successors usually have been attributed to Shingon influence and have sometimes been denigrated as departures from the "pure" zazen practice of Dōgen.[24] This characterization of Dōgen misses the actuality of medieval Japanese Buddhism, with the pervasive influence of Esoteric mikkyō (Vajrayāna) from both Shingon and Tendai, true for Dōgen as well. But I suggest that the devotion of Gikai and Keizan to Kokuzō also reflects allegiance to Dōgen's evocative teachings about space and their lingering impact.

The relationship of Kṣitigarbha and Ākāśagarbha, the bodhisattvas of the earth womb and space womb, recall the Buddha womb, or Tathāgata garbha, discussed in chapter 2. According to this teaching, a buddha is a womb of

embryonic buddha fields, and such an awakened land in turn becomes the womb of embryonic potential buddhas. This dynamic is clearly exemplified by Dōgen in his early writing, "Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way" ("Bendōwa"), in which the person expressing buddha mudrā and the earth and space itself are mutually, interactively supportive.[25] As Peter Gregory says, "Since the *tathāgata garbha* is the enlightened wisdom of the Tathāgata which exists embryonically in all sentient beings, the fact that it is also the ultimate ontological basis of reality [according to the *Śrimāla Sūtra*] has important soteriological consequences. It means that the basis of Buddhist practice is grounded in the very structure of reality."[26] In a similar interaction, the roles in the Mahāyāna of Kṣitigarbha and Ākāśagarbha, earth womb and space womb, would seem to express and clarify facets of Tathāgata garbha. These figures imply the rich potentiality of the earth and of space to be wombs of buddhas, and in turn to be sacralized or celebrated as buddha fields by the awakening of buddhas, again, as expressed in Dōgen's early teaching about the impact on the earth and on space itself of one person's zazen.[27]

Spaciousness as an Expression of Wisdom

As mentioned in chapter 4, while discussing the image of "a space below the earth" in *Lotus Sutra* chapter 15, Gene Reeves emphasizes that "this story wants to affirm . . . the reality and importance of this world, this world of suffering, a world that is, after all, Shakyamuni Buddha's world."[28] In his citations of the story of the emerging underground bodhisattvas, Dōgen also affirms this world and the earth as receptive and supportive of the ever-present potential for awakening. As we have seen in many quotations from his "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" ("Hokke-Ten-Hokke") and elsewhere, Dōgen connects the earth to his sense of space and its open spaciousness. For example, he says, "We should not only realize springing out of the earth; in turning the Flower of Dharma we should also realize springing out of space."[29]

David McMahan explicates the relationship of space to the visionary aspect of Buddhist wisdom: "The ability of the visual system to apprehend vast areas, long distances, and many things simultaneously is often highlighted in Buddhist literature and associated with the sense of spaciousness. . . . This sense of sight as capable of encompassing wide spaces and penetrating to the furthest depths of the cosmos is important to the development of the imagery of Mahāyāna sutras."[30]

According to McMahan, in the Buddhist tradition, and especially the Mahāyāna, space often has been understood in the context of "far-seeing," and

so also serves as an analogue to wisdom or liberation. Thus meditation on space may be employed as an entryway to awakening. In the early Buddhist Abhidharma teachings, space (*ākāśa* in Sanskrit) is one of the few unconditioned Dharmas, alongside nirvaṇa itself: "The Abhidharmakośa describes it as that which does not impede and is unsupported by anything." McMahan describes the "primary symbolic force of space" as deriving from its vastness, formlessness, sameness, extension in all directions, and nonresistance, those aspects of the world "most akin to perfect, transcendent freedom as conceived in Buddhist thought."[31]

Pursuing the metaphoric and symbolic richness of space in the Mahāyāna, McMahan notes, "The association of knowledge with space is one of the more interesting and quite neglected features of Buddhist discourse." Based on the "primary metaphor KNOWING IS SEEING, simply from a linguistic standpoint, connections between vision and space are apparent." McMahan relates the verb "locate" to the meanings "see," "know," and "perceive," and to the Sanskrit verb *loka*, whose primary meaning is "free or open space." Concerning the rhetorical potentialities of space for Buddhist discourse, McMahan points out that the "etymological connection [of space] to light and vision is not overlooked by Buddhists, and it is sometimes said to shine brilliantly. Mahāyāna texts are often less concerned than Abhidharma scholastics with systematic analysis of space and instead exploit the symbolic richness of the concept, making it one of the primary tropes for awakening and wisdom."[32]

While Dōgen uses his comments on the *Lotus Sutra* underground bodhisattvas as a primary referent to express his view of space, the full scope of Mahāyāna use of space as an image in various sutras, as described by McMahan, provides a context for Dōgen's worldview of space. This creative use of space imagery includes some sources from Chan imagery. One of the foundational Chan kōans involves the great Zhaozhou Congshen (778–897; Jōshu Jūshin in Japanese), who asked his teacher Nanquan Puyuan (748–835; Nansen Fugan in Japanese) the fundamental question, "What is the Way (Dao)?"

> Nanquan replied, "Ordinary (or everyday) mind is the Way."
>
> Zhaozhou asked, "How can it be approached?"
>
> Nanquan said, "The more you try to reach it, the further away you get."
>
> Zhaozhou, a most discerning student, asked, "Then how do you know if it is the Way or not?"
>
> Nanquan elaborated, "The Way is not a matter of knowing or not knowing. Knowing is an illusion; not knowing is vacancy. If you reach the true Way beyond doubt, it is vast and open as space."[33]

Here space has qualities of wisdom, vastness, and openness, and so may be used to represent ultimate knowledge, as suggested by McMahan. But even more, for Nanquan space transcends all dichotomies of knowledge and ignorance. Zhaozhou is said to have awakened upon hearing this image of vast, open space superseding the characteristics of human cognition.

Dōgen also heard this liberating reference to space. He included this dialogue as case 19 in his early collection of three hundred kōans, without any of his own commentary, referred to as the *Mana* (or *Shinji*; i.e., Chinese) *Shōbōgenzō*.[34] This is a completely different work from his famed collection of essays called *Shōbōgenzō*, in which he does poetically and extensively elaborate on kōans. He also comments on Nanquan's first response in this story in a variant (undated) version of the *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Going beyond Buddha" ("Bukkōjōji").[35]

The most important Caodong (Sōtō) lineage teacher in the century before Dōgen was Hongzhi Zhengjue (1091–1157; Wanshi Shogaku in Japanese), whom Dōgen cites or refers to very frequently in *Eihei Kōroku*.[36] In his practice instructions, Hongzhi says, "The essence is to empty and open out body and mind, as expansive as the great emptiness of space. Naturally in the entire territory all is satisfied. This strong spirit cannot be deterred; in event after event it cannot be confused."[37] Here is a model for engaging spaciousness in meditation and everyday practice that seems to inform the spacious aspect of Dōgen's own teachings on practice as the present expression of awakening.

Dōgen's Lotus View of Earth and Space Revisited

Having considered elements of the Mahāyāna context for envisioning earth and space, we now return to review the functional and practical import of some of Dōgen's relevant comments on the *Lotus Sutra* story in chapters 15 and 16. In the conclusion of his 1241 *Shōbōgenzō* essay that most fully discusses the *Lotus Sutra*, "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," Dōgen says that after discussing the teaching of the Sixth Ancestor, interpreted by Dōgen as revealing the nondual Dharma flower turning the Dharma flower, now his assembly has "experienced the meeting of ancient buddha with ancient buddhas. So how could this not be a land of ancient buddhas?"[38] Dōgen here indicates that study with the ancient buddhas, and full penetration of their teaching, allows his students to dwell in the buddha land. Where buddhas awaken, the earth must be a land of ancient buddhas. He is also encouraging his students to believe that their practice place is a site of awakening.

In his *Eihei Kōroku* Dharma hall discourse 269 from 1248, Dōgen states, "The Buddha of the land pervades the body and is the entire body. The lands of the Buddha are the suchness of reality, and their non-suchness."[39] This signifies that in reality it is not possible to separate buddhas from their lands, the location where they express ongoing awakening, sometimes called by Dōgen their Dharma position. In the Dharma hall discourse that occasioned the awakening of his major disciple, Tettsū Gikai, Dōgen connected this reality of awakened land with the particulars of the earth. After quoting Śākyamuni Buddha in chapter 16 avowing his long-lived presence and teaching, Dōgen remarked, "All dharmas dwell in their Dharma positions; forms in the world are always present. Wild geese return to the [north] woods, and orioles appear [in early spring]."[40] It is the natural activities of the earth itself that express Buddha's ongoing wisdom.

In his *Shōbōgenzō* essay "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas" ("Gyōbutsu Īgi"), amid references to Śākyamuni's inconceivable life span and images of lotuses themselves, Dōgen emphasizes the indispensable, active role of the earth and its lands for Buddha's activities: "That which allows one corner of a buddha's awesome presence is the entire universe, the entire earth, as well as the entirety of birth and death, coming and going, of innumerable lands, and lotus blossoms."[41] The lotus is a significant symbol for this active role of earth, as it grows and blossoms into beauty from out of the swampy mud of earth. In a couple of Dharma hall discourses in *Eihei Kōroku*, Dōgen uses a colorful line from the *Blue Cliff Record* (*Hekiganroku*) kōan collection, "The more mud, the greater the Buddha," indicating the fertility of the earth and also of the karmic obstructions and suffering that activate the practice of buddhas.[42] In another *Eihei Kōroku* Dharma hall discourse, he says, "The lotus shrine has never been tainted by the mud in the water."[43]

Dōgen directly compares Zen students and seekers to the bodhisattvas emerging from the earth in his *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Sounds of the Valley Streams; Colors of the Mountains" ("Keisei Sanshoku"): "In visiting teachers and seeking the truth, there are mountains to climb and oceans to cross. While seeking a guiding teacher, or hoping to find a good spiritual friend, one comes down from the heavens, or springs out from the earth."[44] Again, this is clearly an encouragement to Dōgen's students to see their efforts in the context of, and as inspired by, the emerging *Lotus Sutra* earth bodhisattvas.

In "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," Dōgen combines the practitioners arising from the earth with their arising from space, all in the advent of the *Lotus Sutra*: "The multitudes of the thousandfold world that spring out of the earth have long been great honored saints of the flower of Dharma but they spring out of the earth being turned by circumstances. In

turning the Flower of Dharma we should not only realize springing out of the earth; in turning the Flower of Dharma we should also realize springing out of space. We should know with the Buddha's wisdom not only earth and space but also springing out of the Flower of Dharma itself."[45] The relationship of earth and space is here expressed as a function of the *Lotus Sutra*. This dynamic concurrence of earth, space, and the Dharma flower is further described in the 1243 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Flowers of Space" ("Kūge"). Dōgen says, "Only the buddhas and ancestors know the blooming and falling of flowers in space and flowers on the ground, only they know the blooming and falling of flowers in the world, only they know that flowers in space, flowers on the ground, and flowers in the world are sutras."[46] For Dōgen, earth, space, and the blossoming flowers all harmoniously expound the Dharma.

Another example of the confluence of the active workings of earth and space and the arising of buddhas and ancestors appears in *Eihei Kōroku* Dharma hall discourse 174 from 1246: "What is thicker than earth is that which arises in earth. What is vaster than empty space is that which arises in empty space. What goes beyond buddhas and ancestors are those who arise from buddhas and ancestors."[47]

Turning to focus on Dōgen's teachings about space, one must inevitably first return to the early (1233) writing, "Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way." There Dōgen proclaims the mutual interactive support of space and the zazen practitioner, when "all space in the universe completely becomes enlightenment."[48] Space (including its expression as the earth, i.e., "grasses and trees, fences and walls, tiles and pebbles, all things in the dharma realm in the universe in ten directions") is further praised as an active provider of awakening guidance and a participant in the transformative buddha work. However, the responsibility of the practitioner also to awaken space in turn is not neglected.

Dōgen amply encourages practitioners to develop an intimate relationship with space itself. For example, in his *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Space" ("Kokū"), he declares, "You should penetrate the inside and outside of space. You should kill space and give life to space. You should know the weight of space. You should trust that the buddha ancestors' endeavor of the way, in aspiration, practice, and enlightenment, throughout the challenging dialogues is no other than grasping space."[49] We can see in such quotes how profoundly the awakening espoused by Dōgen goes beyond mere human psychology and reaches to an ontological, existential realization of interconnectedness that pervades space and is supported by space.

Again, in "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," Dōgen gives subjective agency to space itself when, in the context of the *Lotus Sutra* story

about the ancient buddha who appears with his stūpa floating in midair, Dōgen states, "Space makes space for the treasure stupa."[50] He even proclaims space as the ultimate framework of practice and realization, saying, "The Flower of Dharma, the world of Dharma, and the wholehearted state, are . . . realized as *space*."[51]

Furthermore, Dōgen proclaims the enduring power of space even at the spatial and temporal distance of his Japanese students from the historical Śākyamuni Buddha speaking the *Lotus Sutra* at Vulture Peak. In "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas," Dōgen states, "Although this moment is distant from the sages, you have encountered the transforming guidance of the spreading sky [space] that can still be heard."[52] Because of the still remaining transformative guidance of space itself, Buddha remains alive and Dōgen's students (and, for Dōgen, presumably current practitioners today) can still hear Śākyamuni Buddha's teaching.

Buddhist and Zen Perspectives on Time

Mahāyāna Buddhism includes many contexts for envisioning temporality that are worthy of extensive study. Before discussing Dōgen's approaches to time, I will just briefly describe some of these outlooks, including the Huayan ten times and the figure of Maitreya, which served as background context for Dōgen. I have already noted (in discussing its importance for Nichiren and other Kamakura-period figures in chapter 3) that Dōgen denied any credence to the prevalent contemporary view of time and history, which held that mappō, the final degenerate age of the teaching, had arrived, and so true practice and enlightenment were impossible. For Dōgen, practice-realization is always a potentiality, in all times.[53] Dōgen had to look beyond current preconceptions such as mappō for his approach to liberating aspects of time.

David McMahan has suggested that in the Mahāyāna, time is subsumed within space: "The image of time as contained within space provides the basis for maṇḍalas like the Mahākāla maṇḍala in which time is represented as a circle in space." This spatialization of time represents an important, insightful perspective that allows for a new context for "envisioning" temporality. As McMahan explains, in the earlier Nikāyas (the pre-Mahāyāna scriptures, or *sutta*s, written in Pali rather than Sanskrit), "Impermanence is not to be celebrated but transcended. This changes somewhat in the Mahāyāna, with its assertion of the nonduality of saṃsāra and nirvāṇa; the Mahāyāna found ways to conceive of the transcendence of time within time itself. Part of this is the spatialization of time—assimilating temporality to the always present

dimension of space."[54] McMahan adds significantly to our understanding of the Mahāyāna background for Japanese aesthetic celebration of impermanence, as was discussed in the section on Saigyō in chapter 3. The aesthetics of *yūgen*, with its appreciation of the poignancy of impermanence, is a direct response to the *Lotus Sutra*, as explicated by William LaFleur.[55] But McMahan shows that Saigyō's envisioning of the distant moon over the mountains also brings the "spatialization of time" into the aesthetic celebration of impermanence. Impermanence can be more fully appreciated, and celebrated aesthetically, as it is depicted visually through the space from the poet to the mountains lining the horizon, and to the moon so far beyond but still glowing. Time is marked by impermanence, but space is ever present to help in remembering it.

This spatialization of time helps indicate the importance of Dōgen's sense of the dynamic agency of space for his views of temporality. From McMahan's discussions of the use of spatial imagery to inform temporal awareness, we can more fully see the value of Dōgen's dynamic images of space as actively functioning, potentially expressing the buddha work. Dōgen's views of space transform his being-time. For example, hearing Dōgen say, "You have encountered the transforming guidance of the spreading space that can still be heard," one might envision a sky at sunset, splendid with colorful, drifting, or spreading clouds.[56] But in this image Dōgen is equally highlighting the persistence of the vision's transformative impact in this time "you have encountered." And "still heard" becomes an expression for the persistence in time of the enduring Buddha. This significant role of the spatial imagination as informing Dōgen's view of temporality has not been previously noted, to my knowledge.

Dōgen was deeply concerned about impermanence. But, in accord with McMahan's discussion of Mahāyāna nonduality, Dōgen found resolution to his struggles with impermanence in a spacious attitude toward impermanence itself. As Steven Heine says, Dōgen "strongly rejected . . . efforts to deny the flux both as un-Buddhistic and, more basically, not true to the nature of his own quest and longing to find release from suffering within—rather than in contrast to—the unstoppable transiency of lived-time."[57]

Returning to consideration of other Mahāyāna approaches to temporality, the *Avataṃsaka Sūtra*, or *Flower Ornament Sutra*, in the chapter on "Detachment from the World" speaks of ten times through which great bodhisattvas explain past, present, and future.[58] These ten times are the past, present, and future of the past; the past, present, and future of the future; the past, present, and future of this present; and finally, the interfusion of those previous nine times as the tenth, "being the one instant of the present." Just prior to articulating

these ten times, the sutra offers ten kinds of entry into ages by great bodhisattvas. These are entry "into past ages, future ages, present ages, countable ages, uncountable ages, countable ages as uncountable ages, uncountable ages as countable ages, all ages as not ages, nonages as all ages, and all ages as one instant."[59] The point of time and its durations for bodhisattvas, according to this sutra, is to enter into and inhabit time, in all its temporal aspects, and not to escape into some timeless state. Although Dōgen does not refer to these ten times directly, to my knowledge, he certainly shares the attitude expressed in this section of the sutra, which he of course knew, about fully examining and engaging in the many aspects of time.

From the perspective of his being-time teaching, I imagine Dōgen might playfully elaborate on the dynamic interconnectedness of the ten times in some manner such as the following. The past of the present is also the past of a future. The present of the future will be intimately connected to the future of this present, yet is not necessarily predetermined or limited by this present's future. By shifting prior views of the past, one might reclaim the past in the present, and thus actually change the meaning of the past, and present, for the sake of the future. History is the changing process of defining the past for the present. It may be realized that the history of the future can be rewritten in the present as well as in the future. And how we will see this present present in the future present, or saw it in the past, affects the reality of this present.

Just following the passage of the sutra that details the ten times that explain time, the sutra mentions that bodhisattvas have "ten ways of knowing the worlds of past, present, and future: they know their definitions, their speech, their deliberations, their rules, their appellations, their orders, their provisional names, their endlessness, their quiescence, and their total emptiness. Thus do enlightening beings know all things in all times."[60] Clearly the recommended practice is not to transcend time, but to study and engage its full complexity. This encouragement also becomes central in Dōgen's "Being Time" (see the section below on this essay), when he urges thorough questioning and engagement of time, as in, "People do not doubt the duration of daily time, but even though they do not doubt it, this does not mean that they know what it really is. . . . Their doubting is so inconsistent that the doubts at the previous moment do not necessarily correspond to the doubts at the present moment."[61] Furthermore, Dōgen says in "Being Time," "People only see time's coming and going, and do not thoroughly understand that the time-being abides in each moment. . . . Closely examine this flowing; without your complete effort right now, nothing would be actualized, nothing would flow."[62] Time is not some external, objective, independent entity, but requires a practitioner's "complete effort."

The second Chinese patriarch of the Huayan school, based on the *Avataṃsaka Sūtra*, was Zhiyan (602–668; Chigen in Japanese). In his essay "Ten Mysterious Gates of the Unitary Vehicle of the Huayan," Zhiyan spoke of the ten times as the fifth gate "of various becoming of separate things in the ten time frames." He says, "The ten time frames, by virtue of their interdependent origination, mutually identify and even mutually interpenetrate, yet without losing the three time frames. It is like the ten fingers making a fist yet not losing fingerhood. . . . The ten time frames interpenetrate and interidentify, yet without losing the characteristics of succession and duration: therefore it is said that separate things variously become." Thomas Cleary comments, "The universe—or in Hua-yen terms, the universe of interdependent origination—is at once the totality of causes and the totality of its effects; hence its total present at once contains its total past and total future. This is the basis for the Buddha's knowledge of past and future in the present."[63]

These Huayan ten times, and their interdependent presence in the present as described by Zhiyan and Cleary, offer a rich depiction of the multidimensional quality of time, and its practical implications. Dōgen was certainly aware of this Huayan teaching. As he suggested in his essay "Being Time," the ten times may flow in various directions. Although he does not refer to the Huayan ten times explicitly, we could well see his being-time teaching as playfully elaborating on the dynamic interconnectedness of the ten times.

Maitreya, the bodhisattva predicted by Śākyamuni as the next incarnate Buddha, plays a prominent role in the story of the emerging bodhisattvas and the revelation of Śākyamuni's vast life span in chapters 15 and 16 of the *Lotus Sutra*. Given Maitreya's claims on the future, this featured role is appropriate, and also ironic. In the story Maitreya represents the traditional assembly of the Buddha, voicing the disciples' questions and perplexity, first about the startling emergence of the underground bodhisattvas, and then at the revelation of Śākyamuni's enduring life span. In some ways, both events would seem to supplant Maitreya's main function as guardian of awakening in the future. Maitreya's future buddhahood may seem extraneous, with the underground bodhisattvas prepared to proclaim the *Lotus Sutra* Dharma in the distant future, as stated explicitly by Nichiren (see chapter 3). Maitreya's future awakening would be called into question even more by the speculations surrounding Śākyamuni's enduring future activity.

However, the archetypal figure of Maitreya has been a primary source for an expanded view of temporality in the Mahāyāna tradition.[64] Maitreya is the bodhisattva who represents the unfulfilled aspect of the bodhisattva as not yet

a buddha. He is a mere shadow of his future self, not presently being what everyone knows he is promised to become. A common iconographic version of Maitreya depicts him as sitting up in the Tuṣita Heaven, awaiting his next rebirth and pensively contemplating how to save all sentient beings and become the next Buddha. As we saw in chapter 4, in the *Shōbōgenzō* essay "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas," Dōgen playfully has the long-lived Śākyamuni of the *Lotus Sutra* supersede Maitreya's status even in the Tuṣita Heaven itself, as Dōgen says that the enduring Śākyamuni "still abides there, teaching devas."[65]

Traditional accounts of Maitreya emphasize the vast period of time during which he patiently waits for his future awakening to become present. Predictions of the time before his buddhahood vary considerably. Some sources predict his buddhahood in the year 4456 CE.[66] Other accounts describe it as 5,760 million years in the future.[67] In any event, he is waiting in meditation for a very long time. Such patience embodies a vast time perspective. The Maitreya figure calls up many issues of temporality, but especially invites deep concern for the future, and for future generations, that may be attended to in the present. Thus Maitreya has represented in the Mahāyāna imagination vast ranges of time, but also the hope for the future, with reassurance of a new Buddha age to come. Maitreya devotees have sometimes acted to create the conditions of a better world in preparation for his coming, thereby bringing concern for the future into the practical realm of social reform.[68]

This figure of Maitreya is one source for temporal awareness and inquiry that Dōgen returns to in his writings to express the intricate and mysterious interfolding of time. Just one example is his relatively early, 1241 Dharma hall discourse number 61. He cites a story in which Nanquan says, "There is no Maitreya up in heaven and no Maitreya down on the earth." In his comments to his students, Dōgen repeats Nanquan's words and adds, "Maitreya is not Maitreya; [and so] Maitreya is Maitreya. Even though this is so, doesn't everybody want to see Maitreya?" Dōgen then held up his whisk and said, "You have met with Maitreya. Already having met him, everyone, try to say whether Maitreya exists or does not exist."[69] Here Dōgen demonstrates and evokes the experience of both Maitreya's presence and the uncertainty of Maitreya's being in the past, the future, or the present.

Basic Indian cosmology offers a very wide view of time that was adopted by Buddhism. There is a recurring cycle in every universe of four kalpas: the formation or becoming, continuity or the abiding, the decaying, and the "nonmanifest" or empty.[70] A kalpa is an incalculably long period of time, with one colorful traditional description of its duration as "the image of a bird that

flies once every hundred years over the peak of Mount Everest with a piece of silk in her talons; the length of time it would take the silk to wear down the mountain completely is said to be one *kalpa*."[71] Another calculation is that a short kalpa "is the time required to empty a hundred square mile city enclosure filled with poppy seeds if one seed were to be removed every three years."[72]

Just the conception of such vast reaches of time, albeit abstract and difficult to imagine, is a radical shift from the limitations of our conventional Western views of time and the emphasis on quarterly profit margins. Such vast extents of time are certainly part of the temporal context with which Dōgen plays.

The Chan/Zen Buddhist practice of ancestor veneration allows another vast and much more personal perspective on time. The Zen tradition includes daily ritual recitation of a list of patriarchal ancestors going back to the historical Śākyamuni Buddha around 500 BCE, a list that Dōgen deeply cherished and emphasized. For example, the very brief 1241 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Buddha Ancestors" ("Bussō") consists mostly of repeating the traditional list of names, with the need "to bring them forth and look at them respectfully . . . not limited to the buddhas of past, present, and future."[73]

The now accepted historical inaccuracy of the Indian names of the Zen lineage, concocted later in China, is irrelevant to the expanded temporal sensitivity of the generations who have seen the practice as personally and intimately transmitted through many centuries of time.[74] Whether or not all their correct names had been recorded, that Dōgen felt a personal, spiritual connection to the ancestors throughout the generations is clear from his frequent citations of so many of them. Certainly the lineage was a source for legitimizing the practice in which he and his students engaged. But awareness of a personal connection to people over such a vast time span also allows a wide, deep perspective on time and history.

Dōgen's Caodong (Sōtō) lineage provides some particular encouragements toward long-range time perspectives. The early Caodong progenitor Shitou Xiqian, mentioned in chapter 3 and frequently cited by Dōgen, ends his "Harmony of Difference and Sameness" ("Sandōkai"), "I humbly say to those who study the mystery, don't waste time."[75] The notion of profitably utilizing or "spending" time may seem modern and pedestrian. However, Shitou's purposes include more than mere efficiency. As he indicated in "Harmony of Difference and Sameness" in a previous verse, "Each of the myriad things has its merit, expressed according to function and place."[76] For Shitou, time is useful simply in the interest of the appreciation and expression

of all the particular myriad things. Commenting after repeating Shitou's line, "Don't waste time," in his 1249 Dharma hall discourse number 319, Dōgen encourages fully inhabiting the present time, saying, "Human life is impermanent; how could we wait for some other time?"[77]

In his other important teaching poem, "Song of the Grass Hut" ("Sōanka" in Japanese), Shitou said, "Meet the ancestral teachers, be familiar with their instruction, bind grasses to build a hut and don't give up. Let go hundreds of years and relax completely. Open your hands and walk, innocent."[78] This instruction implies letting go of centuries of karmic attachment. But Shitou here also suggests that release from limited, short-term time perspectives is congruent with complete relaxation, and with innocence beyond all afflictions or suffering.

Mentioned earlier for his encouragement of meditation on space, the twelfth-century Caodong master Hongzhi Zhengjue, who deeply influenced Dōgen, also spoke of temporal transcendence. Hongzhi references the *Lotus Sutra* image of the Dharma rain falling equally on all in his espousal of wider time perspectives: "One thought of the ten thousand years is beginning not to dwell in appearances. Thus it is said that the mind-ground contains every seed and the universal rain makes them all sprout." Envisioning long ranges of time allows a calmer perspective on the immediate urgency of present needs and predicaments and fosters nurturing, organic processes. Hongzhi also says, "This is the time and place to leap beyond the ten thousand emotional entanglements of innumerable kalpas. One contemplation of ten thousand years finally goes beyond all the transitory, and you emerge with spontaneity."[79] Awareness of the wider reaches of time can support a fuller inhabitation and engagement of present situations, or one's own "Dharma position." These cherished masters from Dōgen's own lineage, and the very fact of the long lineage itself, certainly informed his sense of temporality.

Dōgen's Being-Time

Dōgen's renowned 1240 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Being Time" is his primary writing that focuses on temporality, and so must be considered as a context for his comments on time in relation to the story of the enduring Buddha in the *Lotus Sutra*. In this essay, Dōgen clarifies that time does not flow only from past to present to future. Time moves in mysterious ways, passing dynamically and multidirectionally between all ten times and beyond. Dōgen says, "In being-time there is the distinctive function of [totalistic] passage (kyōraku); there is passage from today to tomorrow, passage from today to yesterday, passage

from yesterday to today, passage from today to today, and passage from tomorrow to tomorrow. This transpires because passage itself is the distinctive function of time."[80] This multidirectional passage makes it possible for beings to realize how they fully inhabit all times as the present time, rather than seeking for the present as a restrictive escape from regret for the past or anxiety over the future. Although the movement of being-time is omnidirectional, it is also a discontinuity in which each being and all time are fully present. The richness of being-time is the vivid presencing of each being's time. For Dōgen, each time of being fully exerts itself in total expressiveness. This is the deep reality of time that he urges his audience to actualize right here and now.

Dōgen says, "Since a sentient being's doubting of the many and various things unknown to him are naturally vague and indefinite, the course his doubtings take will probably not bring them to coincide with this present doubt. Nonetheless, the doubts themselves are, after all, none other than time."[81] Steven Heine says about Dōgen's inclusive present time, "Beings are invariably temporal occurrences; time always presences *as* all beings. There is no being in the entire *Dharma*-realm outside this very moment of time."[82]

Dōgen's being-time reflects the spatialization of temporality described by David McMahan, as time is described in terms of the space of landscapes. But for Dōgen, space also depends on this time of being. As he says in "Being Time," "Mountains are time. Oceans are time. If they were not time, there would be no mountains or oceans. Do not think that mountains and oceans here and now are not time. If time is annihilated, mountains and oceans are annihilated."[83] Here Dōgen expresses the thorough integration of time, space, and earth, a key aspect of his worldview, explored in this work primarily in relation to his comments on *Lotus Sutra* chapters 15 and 16.

For Dōgen, time, as we have seen for space, is not some intractable, merely external container within which beings are caught. All beings *are* time, just as "earth, grasses and trees, fences and walls, tiles and pebbles, all things in the dharma realm in the universe in ten directions, carry[ing] out buddha work,"[84] *are* space. When beings fully express themselves right now, that is time. Dōgen says, "The sharp vital quick of dharmas dwelling in their dharma-positions is itself being-time."[85] Beings cannot help but fully express their deepest truth right now. One cannot avoid being-time. Even a partial, half-hearted exertion of being-time is completely a partial being-time. As Dōgen says, "Even the being-time of a partial exhaustive penetration is an exhaustive penetration of a partial being-time."[86] This may well be heard as profoundly consoling, but it does not mean that individual beings do not have any responsibility for being-time through their own effort or expression.

In his intricate philosophical analysis of the *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Being Time" in *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, Steven Heine discusses Dōgen's being-time in terms of what Heidegger calls "primordial time" (*ursprüngliche Zeit*), which Heine equates with Dōgen's "truth of being-time" (*uji no dōri*).[87] Both Heidegger and Dōgen see this primordial time as transcending the limited, ordinary view of time that vainly imagines some stable, real present, although both recognize some partial validity to the conventional time sense.[88] Heine further describes this primordial time as "neither an eternal realm beyond existence nor another attribute of existence which could be logically or ontologically added onto it either before or after existence is described; nor does existence, conceived of substantively, persist 'in' objectified time."[89] Dōgen's primordial time is not some objective entity with its own independent process transpiring beyond the activity of beings.

Throughout his writings, Dōgen emphatically highlights the responsibility of practitioners. As Heine says, "Primordial time ultimately depends upon and is fulfilled only by means of each being's fully sustained and perpetually renewed selfless exertive power." He adds, "Dōgen's emphasis on the temporal unity of practice and realization also seems to suggest that the presencing of being-time itself is made possible by virtue of the selfless here-and-now activity which realizes itself as primordial time. No aspect or realm of temporal existence is independent of the individual's exertive effort."[90]

Dōgen's Lotus View of Time Revisited

Although "Being Time" is Dōgen's most focused treatment of temporality, there are sections of other *Shōbōgenzō* essays and passages in *Eihei Kōroku* that offer further discussion of time. However, Dōgen does not provide enough developed material to derive a consistent "philosophy of time." And, of course, he is more concerned with encouraging practice than formulating philosophical positions. Yet reviewing some of Dōgen's comments on the *Lotus Sutra* story of chapters 15 and 16 that relate to issues of temporality can provide some helpful, illuminating examples of how he expresses his dynamic view of time, and its practice. Near the conclusion of "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," he proclaims the active pervasion of the *Lotus Sutra* and its teaching through and by time, as he did for the ground of the Buddha land: "We should rejoice that the Dharma flower is turning from age to age, and the Dharma flower is turning from day to night, as the Dharma flower turns the ages and turns the days and nights."[91] The nondualistic Lotus

teaching is described as fully integrated with and mutually interacting with all the vast expanses of time, as well as its briefer durations. Dōgen here proclaims that this teaching of the Dharma flower, that is, the *Lotus Sutra*, is both engaged throughout time, but also in some sense itself impels the varied passagings of time.

Furthermore, in "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," Dōgen declares the unity of all Time, or ultimate temporality, which he believes is represented exactly in the long life span of Śākyamuni. We have seen how Dōgen expounded multidimensional qualities of being-time. The year after writing "Being Time," he celebrates in "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" the temporality of Śākyamuni of the *Lotus Sutra* and encourages his students to recognize this enduring, unified time: "Turning the Flower of Dharma we should realize the one Time in which the Buddha is living."[92] But this "one Time" is a shifting, multidirectional time, in which, as Dōgen says just previously (quoting from chapter 16 of the sutra), "the father is young and the son is old."[93] Here Dōgen points to this enduring Buddha as inhabiting all times, and awakening these times, and also awakening their new buddhas, even while transcending time. Discussing Dharma transmission, he quotes Śākyamuni as saying, "All buddhas of the past are disciples of myself, Shakyamuni Buddha."[94] From this transcendent time of the *Lotus Sutra* Śākyamuni, all the many particular times usher forth now, including past as well as future.

Dōgen uses the image of the enduring Buddha to show the present moment as a dynamic process inclusive of all times. Near the beginning of "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas" he says, "Know that buddhas in the buddha way do not wait for awakening. Active buddhas alone fully experience the vital process on the path of going beyond buddha."[95] Awakening is not something that can occur in a nonpresent future. It is a dynamic process that happens in the present experience of practice, but without excluding past or future, or any other aspect of this time of going beyond any fixed time. Dōgen explains that it is "not that the lifespan of the Buddha has prevailed only in the past, but that what is called *vast numbers* is a total inclusive attainment. What is called *still now* is the total lifespan."[96] For Dōgen, the Buddha's vast life span expresses time as the present actuality of nondual practice and awakening in the concrete, present time that includes all times.

In the *Shōbōgenzō* essay "The Tathāgata's Whole Body" ("Nyōrai Zenshin"), Dōgen quotes from chapter 12 of the *Lotus Sutra*: "For countless eons Śākyamuni has practiced difficult and painful practices, accumulated merits, and sought the Way of the bodhisattva, and thus even though he is now a Buddha, he still practices diligently."[97] Dōgen comments, "The long eons of difficult and

painful practices are the activity of the womb of the Buddha. . . . When it is said that these practices have not ceased even for a second, it means that even though he is perfectly enlightened, he still practices vigorously, and he continues forever even though he converts the whole universe. This activity is the whole body of the Tathāgata."[98] Above all, Dōgen emphasizes that enlightenment, like Buddha, is not an event that happens only at one particular time, once and for all. Rather, it is an ongoing, vigorous activity that awakens time itself, just as with the zazen practitioner's upright presence "all space in the universe completely becomes enlightenment."[99] As it is for space, so this process of ongoing awakening engages time.

Central to the explorations in this work of Dōgen's worldview and how it reflects the *Lotus Sutra* story of the underground bodhisattvas' emergence and Buddha's life span is the capacity of Dōgen's perspective to inform modern understandings of both Japanese Zen and the intriguing worldview of East Asian Mahāyāna Buddhism. One point is simply the deep Mahāyāna underpinnings of Japanese Zen, markedly expressed through Dōgen's strong relationship to the *Lotus Sutra*. In these traditions, and particularly in the Sōtō lineage derived from Dōgen, the vision of earth, space, and time as dynamic supports for bodhisattva work is important to their praxis development as well as metaphysical views. These visions go beyond anthropocentric or psychotherapeutic biases to provide a deep ontological basis for Mahāyāna practice as an active, dynamic expression of ultimate reality. Dōgen's conceptions of earth, space, and time exhibit his deep meditative and highly creative articulation of the Buddha Dharma. And yet they also reflect his embeddedness in the wider East Asian Mahāyāna tradition, including its imagery of bodhisattva figures such as Jizō, Kokuzō, and Maitreya.

Afterword

Implications of Dōgen's Mahāyāna Worldview

As a conclusion to this study of Dōgen's Mahāyāna Buddhist worldview, its potential implications can be further explored in a variety of contemporary concerns. In this afterword I briefly suggest a few realms that I believe would be fruitful for further studies, in which Dōgen's perspective as explored in this work may be useful and mutually informative.

We have seen in the citations near the end of chapter 4 how Dōgen directs his interpretations to encouragement of current practitioners. He is not interested solely in promulgating an abstract philosophical or cosmological doctrine for its own sake, but in further promoting beneficial activity and awareness. This *Lotus Sutra* story implies and illuminates an understanding of the pervading sacrality of earth, space, and time. For Dōgen the pure suchness of earth, space, and time serves as a matrix for practice and for further expressions of awakening. This awakened space-time is the context and a support for bodhisattva activity and clarifies the meaning of Mahāyāna thought. The worldview of space and earth, and of time, expressed in Dōgen's use of the *Lotus Sutra* may serve as a platform for clarifying twenty-first-century approaches to understanding bodhisattva awareness and praxis.

What follows is not intended as a full presentation of the relationships between Dōgen's worldview and these other fields, but simply offers possibilities for additional inquiry. One realm is the intersection of Mahāyāna spirituality with modern physics. Another

is the relevance of Dōgen's worldview to ecological consciousness. This ecological aspect of Dōgen's worldview of awakened earth, space, and time is also applicable to Dharmic practices of social ethics and action, which recently have been referred to as "engaged Buddhism."

Dōgen's Worldview and String Theory

Writings on the congruences between Buddhism (and other Asian spiritualities) and modern physics have been popular since Fritjof Capra's *Tao of Physics* in the mid-1970s, with ongoing interest and new studies still appearing.[1] In many areas there are parallels between the two. I believe this is also the case in looking at Dōgen's worldview and aspects of the *Lotus Sutra*. In his writings Dōgen provides models for multidimensional awareness of space and time that seem to provocatively complement contemporary physics. I do not claim any comprehensive understanding of the innovative, cutting-edge, and somewhat controversial realm of string theory physics, so I will not attempt to make extended explorations of parallels in specific aspects of the perspectives of Dōgen and string theory, but will simply suggest areas for further study of their correspondences that I believe may be mutually informative and inspiring.

Of course, there is no historical relationship between Dōgen's worldview and modern cosmological theories of physics. Moreover, one view comes from the perspective of medieval East Asian Buddhism, aimed at encouraging spiritual practice, and the other is an attempt to mathematically resolve modern questions in the science of physics. So these perspectives have vastly different functions and purposes, as well as highly disparate historical and cultural contexts.[2] I see no need to justify or validate Dōgen's teachings through their similarity to modern science, nor to support string theory physics by its echoing of ancient Oriental wisdom. Each side is quite capable of speaking for itself. The point of exploring what seem to me commonalities between these worldviews is the potential for their differences to shed mutual light on aspects of each that are not readily apparent. Especially the differences within the aspects that seem analogous may inspire fresh insights for each.

Even a casual review of some of the more accessible treatments of string theory offers stimulating parallels to Dōgen's view of space and time as vital agents for increased awareness.[3] Superstring theory physicist Brian Greene states, "Science is still struggling to understand what space and time actually are."[4] We have seen how Dōgen uses his playful imagination to persistently inquire into the realities of space and time. String theory is particularly noted

for its suggestions of multiple dimensions, somewhat reminiscent of the innumerable multiple realms of Mahāyāna sutras, such as the distant buddha fields from which bodhisattvas arrive to visit Śākyamuni Buddha while he preaches the *Lotus Sutra*. String theory "claims that our universe has many more dimensions than meet the eye—dimensions that are tightly curled into the folded fabric of the cosmos."[5]

String theory is considered most promising in that it proposes to integrate the two major, established principles of modern physics, relativity theory and quantum mechanics, which heretofore have been in irreconcilable conflict. Both of these theories hold congruences to Buddhist perspectives. In the realm of relativity theory, Brian Greene says, "Space and time . . . can no longer be thought of as an inert backdrop on which the events of the universe play themselves out; rather, through special and then general relativity, they are intimate players in the events themselves."[6] This strikingly echoes Dōgen's thirteenth-century views of the dynamic involvement of space and time in the world, as they are "intimate players," potentially available to actively support Buddha's work. As we have seen, Dōgen proclaims the mutual supportive relationship between space and the zazen practitioner. And he declares the inseparability of temporality from our present existence and functioning.

As for current quantum theory, commenting on its relationship to the Buddhist teaching of interdependence, astrophysicist Trinh Xuan Thuan says, "Quantum mechanics thus eliminates all idea of locality. It provides a holistic idea of space. The notions of 'here' and 'there' become meaningless, because 'here' is identical to 'there.' This is the definition of what physicists call 'nonseparability.' "[7] This nonseparability of space seems in accord with Buddhist views of interconnectedness; for example, in his *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Space," Dōgen says, "Space is one ball that bounces here and there."[8] His images of the interactive, pervading capacity of space and its potential for rapid awakening may help illuminate and illustrate this "nonseparability" of physicists, in which seemingly distant elements of space are actually one totality.

We have seen space itself awakening and doing buddha work in Dōgen's "Talk on Wholehearted Practice of the Way" ("Bendōwa").[9] Dōgen also invokes the "transforming guidance" of pervading space, enduring throughout time, in "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas" ("Gyōbutsu Īgi").[10] Further, he proclaims that space has the capacity to create space for a prehistoric buddha's relics in "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" ("Hokke-Ten-Hokke").[11] These accounts about the active functioning of space in the buddha work, which for him go along with space's inseparability or interconnectedness, may suggest to string theorists new approaches for investigating how space is actively functioning.

As for time, Dōgen speaks of "the one Time in which the Buddha is living."[12] In "Being Time" ("Uji") he further describes the multidirectional passaging of time and the primary importance of questioning and including the range of temporal perspectives.[13] Certainly the questioning of our conventional time sense is also important in physics. As Greene says, "From the perspective of sentient beings, [time flowing] seems obvious. As I type these words, I clearly *feel* time flowing. . . . Yet, as hard as physicists have tried, no one has found any convincing evidence within the laws of physics that supports this intuitive sense that time flows."[14] Dōgen's questioning of time and his descriptions of its multidirectional passaging may perhaps suggest new ways of approaching this significant issue in current physics. His insistence on temporality as a function of being itself may inspire new string theory understandings of the multiplicity of dimensions.

Perspectives from the new physics might also help illuminate qualities of Dōgen's Mahāyāna worldview. In his book *The Cosmic Landscape: String Theory and the Illusion of Intelligent Design*, Leonard Susskind, who is considered the father of string theory, describes reality as understood in physics in terms of "landscapes." Susskind says, "The Landscape is a space of possibilities. It has geography and topography with hills, valleys, flat plains, deep trenches, mountains, and mountain passes. But unlike an ordinary landscape, it isn't three-dimensional. The landscape has hundreds, maybe thousands, of dimensions." This may provide a way of seeing the multiple dimensions in Mahāyāna reality and the multiple dimensions of space and time for Dōgen. Susskind clarifies that "the Landscape is *not* a real place. It doesn't exist as a real location on the earth or anywhere else. It doesn't exist in space and time at all."[15] In Dōgen's Sino-Japanese, landscapes are *sansui* (literally "mountains and waters," as discussed below), which are physical, concrete realms of space and time, even though Dōgen's wordplay provides his landscapes with deeper levels of meaning.

But the string theory landscape might also suggest, if only by metaphor, fresh views of Dōgen's space and time. Susskind discusses the various fields in the landscape, such as gravitational and electromagnetic, as "invisible properties of space that influence objects moving through them."[16] This recalls the mutual, inconceivable influence between practitioners and the elements, or perhaps fields, of space discussed by Dōgen.[17] Susskind declares, "Space can be filled with a wide variety of invisible influences that have all sorts of effects on ordinary matter."[18]

Dōgen's visions of awakening space and time, significantly impacted by the *Lotus Sutra*, merit further study. Perhaps his perspectives can even provide a potential traditional source of inspiration for scholars developing strands of

string theory physics. And unravelings of the mysterious aspects of string theory may equally assist in approaches to further untangling of the differences and parallels in Dōgen's visionary wordplay.

Dōgen's Worldview and Ecology

Another major prospective area for additional study is the relationship of Dōgen's vision to ecology and environmental awareness. His views of earth as a space or field that can mutually nourish and be supported by spiritual practitioners has a range of implications for how we can see the natural environment in terms of a constructive, dynamic interrelationship.

There already exists an active, developing field of study involving Buddhism and environmental thought and practice, with a number of works that have included references to Dōgen. Prominent among these is the 1997 collection edited by Mary Evelyn Tucker and Duncan Ryūken Williams, *Buddhism and Ecology: The Interconnection of Dharma and Deeds* (mentioned in chapter 5 in connection with the quote from Allan Grapard), which is part of the excellent Harvard University Press series on Religions of the World and Ecology.[19] An earlier, less academic collection on Buddhism and ecology from 1990 is *Dharma Gaia*.[20] Among the various works by individual writers on Buddhism and ecology, especially relevant are those of Gary Snyder, Joanna Macy, and Stephanie Kaza.[21]

The worldview of earth, space, and time expressed by Dōgen in his responses to the central story in the *Lotus Sutra* can further inform this field of religion and environmental study. The connectedness of elements of the earth, and its East Asian Mahāyāna context, resonates with thinkers from the modern deep ecology movement. For example, in his essay "The Japanese Concept of Nature and Aldo Leopold," Steve Odin points out, "The environmental ethics of Aldo Leopold arises from a metaphysical presupposition that things in nature are not separate, independent, or substantial objects, but relational fields existing in mutual dependence upon each other, thus constituting a synergistic ecosystem of organisms interacting with their environment. According to Leopold's field concept of nature, the land is a single living organism wherein each part affects every other part."[22] This modern formulation can readily be seen as an expression of Buddhist dependent co-arising as it functions in the ground of earth.

Further, "For the Norwegian environmental philosopher Arne Naess [who coined the term 'deep ecology'], ecology suggests 'a relational total field image [in which] organisms [are] knots in the biospherical net of intrinsic

relations.' "[23] This certainly echoes Dōgen's images of myriad elements of the earth arising together. Dōgen uses the image of bodhisattvas emerging from underground to extol the spiritual fertility of the earth, pervading through space and inspiring new practitioners. His view of the earth as an active agent for awakening that can be mutually supportive with practitioners may further expand the possibilities for seeing constructive engagement with the earth in deep ecology thought.

Gary Snyder, University of California at Davis professor, Beat poet, and Rinzai Zen adept, is the true originator of the field of Buddhism and ecology studies. Snyder calls Dōgen "a proto-ecologist, a thinker who had remarkable insight deep into the way that wild nature works."[24] Snyder celebrates the spiritual depth of Dōgen's environmental savvy especially in discussion of his 1240 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Mountains and Waters Sutra" ("Sansuikyō").[25] This essay is one of Dōgen's most elegant depictions of the wondrous interpenetration of the natural world (not previously mentioned herein, as it does not specifically reference *Lotus Sutra* chapters 15 and 16). It might also be read as the "Landscape Sutra," as *sansui*, literally "mountains and waters," also is used as a compound to mean landscapes generally, as in landscape gardens. As just one example of Snyder's appreciation of this essay, he mentions Dōgen's quoting of an ancient Chinese writer: "The path of water is such that when it rises to the sky, it becomes raindrops; when it falls to the ground it becomes rivers." Then Snyder quotes from Dōgen's commentary: "The path of water is not noticed by water, but is realized by water." Snyder notes:

> There is the obvious fact of the water-cycle and the fact that mountains and rivers indeed form each other: waters are precipitated by heights, carve or deposit landforms in their flowing descent, and weight the offshore continental shelves with sediment to ultimately tilt more uplifts. . . . One does not need to be a specialist to observe that landforms are a play of stream-cutting and ridge-resistance and the waters and hills interpenetrate in endlessly branching rhythms. . . . "Mountains and waters" is a way to refer to the totality of the process of nature. As such it goes well beyond dichotomies of purity and pollution, natural and artificial.[26]

Snyder's comments indicate the full "realization" of how, as Dōgen says, the path of water is "realized by water," both in the natural process of waters cutting through and uplifting mountains, but also in how "mountains and waters" themselves express awareness of the full totality, beyond dichotomies. Dōgen's sense of the earth is both nondualistic and wide-ranging. He consistently emphasizes the realizational imperative of practice, that humans bear

responsibility for actively expressing and making real the mountains and waters, but also, beyond human conceptual categories, that mountains and waters realize themselves, as well as realizing the persons within the mountains and waters. Snyder cites the "Mountains and Waters Sutra" maxim, "Although mountains belong to the nation, they really belong to the people who love them." Recognizing the value to deep ecology of Dōgen's writings, Snyder comments, "This is weirdly cogent for us as we debate about land-use policies with the governments and corporations of the world. . . . Dōgen causes us to look at the world in many layers, from many sides, on all scales, with both the spiritual eye and the eye of the non-human all-species ecological imagination."[27]

A development of deep ecology that is particularly relevant to Dōgen's being-time, and also to his "one Time in which the Buddha is living,"[28] is the discourse of "Deep Time" by Joanna Macy. In the course of investigating and questioning temporality, Macy discusses the long-term dangers to the environment throughout ranges of time from the vast longevity of poisonous nuclear waste, the negative reflection of the long-lived healing Buddha. She dramatizes the consequent spiritual need for modern people to become intimately aware of beings of the future and of a wider sense of time.[29] Macy talks about "reinhabiting" time, about our present responsibility to future generations, and generally of questioning our usual perspectives on temporality. In her examination of the New Age slogan, "Be Here Now," she criticizes spirituality that seeks to escape the fullness of time by hiding in a static present, safe from the hazards of the future and the consequences of the past, which actually are dynamically included in our deeper present.[30] Her contemporary questioning of conventional temporal perspectives is informed by the sense of temporality envisioned by Dōgen, with his encouragement to actively question and fully experience the multiple dimensions of the current time of being.

Dōgen's Worldview and Social Ethics

Dōgen's Mahāyāna view of the mutual guidance between the zazen practitioner and the environment, and of the spiritual fertility of the earth, has implications for environmental and social ethics. Dōgen encourages individuals to see their nonseparation from and mutuality with all the things of the earth, beyond a merely anthropocentric value system. Such awareness is a quality of *prajñā*, the wisdom that sees into the emptiness of all isolated, individual entities, and thereby into the radical interconnectedness, or dependent coarising, of all things. Prajñā and ethics (*śila* in Sanskrit), or beneficial activity,

are seen in the Mahāyāna as interwoven. As Paul Williams says, wisdom "occurs within the context of the extensive and compassionate Bodhisattva deeds, the aspiration to full Buddhahood for the benefit of all sentient beings."[31]

In Dōgen's nonanthropocentric vision of people intimately related to the earth and space itself, one consequence is the possibility of people taking some ethical responsibility for their environment's well-being. We have seen how the practitioner's effort is intimately involved in being-time. Similarly, the intricate interconnection of the individual and earth or space implies ethical responsibility. As Steve Odin says about the Western context of Aldo Leopold's ecological worldview, "While in the past ethical discourse has been confined to the human community so as to pertain solely to the relation between individuals and society, environmental ethics extends this into the realm of . . . the symbiotic relation between humans and land."[32] Inversely, Dōgen's view of bodhisattva activity is certainly not limited to the nonhuman, environmental implications implied by the earth bodhisattvas. For example, in his 1243 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "The Bodhisattva's Four Methods of Guidance" ("Bodaisatta Shishō Hō"), Dōgen discusses generosity, kind speech, beneficial action, and identity-action (or cooperation) as four approaches to helping people, although he also employs images involving the earth.[33]

However, recent historical studies are questioning and exploring the basis for Zen Buddhist ethical systems.[34] The field of contemporary Zen Buddhist ethics received much impetus from the challenging historical exploration of Japanese Zen Buddhist involvement in World War II militarism in Brian Victoria's *Zen at War*. Currently, academics have been considering and questioning the development of samurai Zen in Japan and the wider East Asian Buddhist history of accommodation to the powers of the day. Relevant reflections have included the historical role of Confucian ethics in complementing and being accepted by Zen Buddhism; the problematical relationship (or perhaps lack thereof) between enlightenment and ethics; the Zen tradition's sometimes inadequate expression of the bodhisattva ethos of compassion; and the questions and potential resources for Western Zen transforming an East Asian tradition to contexts with modernist ethical assumptions.[35] The perspective of Dōgen's worldview, with its strong Mahāyāna background, can contribute to the prospective construction of a positive modern Zen societal ethic.

In "Voices of Mountains, Trees, and Rivers: Kūkai, Dōgen, and a Deeper Ecology," Graham Parkes questions the ethical implications of Dōgen's teaching of all beings equally expounding the Dharma: "What would Dōgen say about these causes of fatal disease and lethal pollution? Are deadly viruses and plutonium waste part of Buddha-nature?" Parkes cites the statement from

Dōgen's 1243 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "The Three Worlds Are Mind Only" ("Sangai Yuishin"), "Walls and tile, mountains, rivers, and the great earth are all mind-only." But in Parkes's interpretation, Dōgen is sensitive to the broad perspective of varying "dharma positions." Parkes concludes, "One might reasonably wonder whether Dōgen would be comfortable saying that even fences or roof-tiles made of nonbiodegradable plastic are Buddha-nature," and then opines that "Dōgen would want to take into account the effects of propagating tubercle bacilli or radioactive waste on the flourishing of human (and other) beings before deciding to let them bloom."[36]

Parkes's interpretation of Dōgen recognizes his view of the world as vibrantly awakening, but also as not only descriptive but prescriptive. Such a dynamic world is not simply another external object to passively observe from some settled vantage point outside the world. From deep-seated conditioning and ignorance people usually see the world, other people, and ultimately even themselves as dead objects, mere commodities to manipulate and exploit. As Bob Dylan points out, many people of this time do what they do just "to be nothing more than something they invest in."[37] But the world Dōgen is speaking from is alive and unfolding with awakening. Being not at all apart from such a dynamic world, active participation and also dedicated protection of its awakening potentialities are essential. The "observer" is involved, with the ability to respond and the responsibility to support well-being and wholeness.

Dōgen's view, informed by the *Lotus Sutra*, that the world itself can be a living spiritual agent is a significant resource for a societal ethic. If such a worldview is accepted, the world itself and its elements may render appropriate support and encouragement in the long-term project of developing skillful approaches to fostering awakening and compassion in our world. Practitioners' own active engagement in supporting social justice and peace not only benefits beings of the world, but may in turn help to develop and deepen their own personal awakening.

Throughout his teaching career Dōgen increasingly emphasized the importance of bodhisattva precepts and practitioners' responsibility for upholding their Dharma-position in space and time.[38] This emphasis is consistently reflected in his frequent and persistent exhortations to his disciples to engage in vigorous, wholehearted practice. While this concern with bodhisattva ethics can be seen throughout Dōgen's life, simplistic and misleading stereotypical views of early and later periods in his career have claimed that he altered his philosophical position to emphasize ethical precepts only in his later years. In his recent book, *Did Dōgen Go to China? What He Wrote and When He Wrote It*, Steven Heine has presented a helpful and careful, more nuanced treatment of the various phases in Dōgen's career, which were actually based primarily

on his shifts in teaching genre and style and the needs of his audience. But there indeed were some changing emphases at times in Dōgen's teaching career, including an enhanced concern about ethical practices in some of his later works. Dōgen clearly gave additional attention to the effects of karma and ethical practice in later portions of *Eihei Kōroku* and in the several essays of *Shōbōgenzō* believed to have been written in his later years.[39]

The bodhisattva vow to awaken all beings is a fundamental principle for clarifying and expressing Mahāyāna ethics. At the beginning of *Eihei Kōroku* Dharma hall discourse number 434 from 1251, Dōgen stresses the importance of this vow, declaring, "The family style of all buddhas and ancestors is to first arouse the vow to save all living beings by removing suffering and providing joy. Only this family style is inexhaustibly bright and clear."[40] The "family style" is a common Zen expression for the teaching style of a particular lineage, but it is used here by Dōgen for the family of all buddhas and all their followers, in which the bodhisattva vow to save all living beings, and alleviate their suffering, is primary. In Dharma hall discourse number 439, only slightly later, Dōgen says, "Bodhisattvas studying the way should know how Buddha nature produces the conditions for Buddha nature."[41] Practitioners bear responsibility for investigating how to use the present awareness and expression of buddha nature to foster further beneficial expression of buddha nature in the world.

Dōgen expresses this bodhisattvic ethical imperative directly in terms of *Lotus Sutra* chapter 16 and as Śākyamuni's enduring life span itself. In the 1244 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "Awakening to the Bodhi-Mind" ("Hotsu Bōdaishin"), he quotes the Buddha's statement at the very end of chapter 16: "I have always given thought to how I could cause all creatures to enter the highest supreme Way and quickly become Buddhas." Dōgen then comments, "This *is* the Tathāgata's lifetime itself. Buddhas' establishment of the mind, training, and experience of the effect are all like this. Benefiting living beings means causing living beings to establish the will to deliver others before they attain their own deliverance."[42] The responsibility of practitioners to the world of beings is a prime directive for Dōgen.

Coda

The realms of current physics, environmental consciousness, and social ethics are suggested as areas that may benefit from further studies of Dōgen's vision, and that may in turn be illuminating for such study. Dōgen presents a unique worldview of earth, space, and time (all deeply interrelated), which he creatively

developed from the Mahāyāna context, especially from the *Lotus Sutra*. Appreciation of this worldview is crucial for a full understanding of Zen Buddhism. This view is relevant not only to contemporary Buddhist practice, but also to broader contemporary metaphysical, societal, and ethical issues.

A twentieth-century vision of time, from T. S. Eliot's *Four Quartets*, provides a helpful expression of the interfolding of past, present, and future times as here in the abiding present. Eliot's time sense is certainly congruent with the interfolding passaging of time envisioned by Dōgen in his own "nexus of exquisite mythopoeic imaginings."[43] Eliot writes:

> Time present and time past
> Are both perhaps present in time future,
> And time future contained in time past. . . .
> What might have been and what has been
> Point to one end, which is always present.[44]

Such time-being does not partition or separate temporal nodes but recognizes all times as present together. But to recognize this rich interconnectedness of deep time requires practice and mindful attention to the fullness of the present, as Dōgen also encourages. Eliot fully honors this project and its deeply spiritual quality later in the *Four Quartets* when he says:

> Men's curiosity searches past and future
> And clings to that dimension. But to apprehend
> The point of intersection of the timeless
> With time, is an occupation for the saint—.[45]

This page intentionally left blank

Notes

PREFACE

1. Among many such stories, another worth noting briefly is the celebrated but likely apocryphal story of an 1850s speech by Chief Seattle warning Euro-Americans that the spirits of native peoples would someday emerge from under the ground. These spirits would then teach the descendants of their white conquerors about the spiritual qualities of the land, the sacred and wondrous within each feature of the earth. For a thorough academic treatment of this story, including issues about its historicity, see Furtwangler, *Answering Chief Seattle*.

2. All issues of historicity concerning Indian sutras are at best matters of educated speculation, often based on dates of translation into Chinese. Although Indian dating is not at all relevant to the focus of this work, which concerns East Asian views of the sutra, some current scholarly speculation holds that at least the earlier portions of the *Lotus Sutra* are among the earliest Mahāyāna texts, from 100 or 200 BCE. Andrew Rawlinson argues, "on the basis of internal evidence, that the original kernel of the Lotus goes back to c. 150 B.C." Rawlinson, "Studies in the Lotus Sūtra," 393; see also 11–18, 393–395. For a variety of other information and speculation on *Lotus Sutra* dating, see Hirakawa, *A History of Indian Buddhism*, 251, 282–286, 302–303; Schopen, *Bones, Stones, and Buddhist Monks*, 126–127; Williams, *Mahayana Buddhism*, 142–143; Sangharakshita, *The Eternal Legacy*, 103–104; and K. Mizuno, *Buddhist Sutras*, 33, 71, 124.

3. Dillard, *For the Time Being*, 14–16.

4. Lopez and Rockefeller, *The Christ and the Bodhisattva*, 24.

CHAPTER 1

1. I am using the Chinese/Japanese edition of Kumārajīva's translation, Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 2: 284–322, 3: 11–36. For full translations I have consulted Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 225–244; Katō, Tamura, and Miyasaka, *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 237–256; Kubo and Yuyama, *The Lotus Sutra*, 221–243; and Watson, *The Lotus Sutra*, 212–232.

2. The second character of their names (gyō 行, as in shugyō 修行 or "practice cultivation") might also be translated as "practice" or "action" as well as "conduct."

3. The significance of these chapters in the literary structure of the whole sutra is described in Shioiri, "The Meaning of the Formation and Structure of the *Lotus Sutra*," 15–36.

4. See Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 24.

5. Groner, "Shortening the Path," 439–473; Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 31–33.

6. Nattier, "The Lotus Sutra: Good News for Whom?"

7. See Ueda and Hirota, *Shinran*.

8. See, for example, Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*; and Stambaugh, *Impermanence Is Buddha-Nature*.

9. For Zhanran, see Penkower, "T'ien-t'ai During the T'ang Dynasty"; and Sharf, "On the Buddha-nature of Insentient Things."

10. Sharf, *Coming to Terms with Chinese Buddhism*, 247.

11. Waddell and Abe, *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 60–65; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 72–77.

12. See T. Cleary, *Entry into the Inconceivable*, 24–42, 147–169; and G. C. C. Chang, *The Buddhist Teaching of Totality*, 18–21, 136–170.

13. See Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 8–10, 62–63, 76–77; Powell, *The Record of Tung-shan*, 61–66; and Verdu, *Dialectical Aspects in Buddhist Thought*, 115–242.

14. Powell, *The Record of Tung-shan*, 23–26.

15. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 15.

16. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 23; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

17. See Taigen Dan Leighton and Kazuaki Tanahashi, trans., "Turning the Dharma Wheel," in Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 196–198; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 361–365. For *Eihei Kōroku*, see Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 198–199; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 118. "Dharma hall discourse" is my translation for *jōdō*, literally, "ascending the hall," a formal Chan monastic talk given in the Dharma hall by the teacher who sits on the altar while the monks stand.

18. Dōgen questions the authenticity of the *Śurāṅgama Sūtra* in *Shōbōgenzō*, "Turning the Dharma Wheel." This sutra's inauthenticity is confirmed by modern

scholars, who generally accept that it was created in China. See Williams, *Mahayana Buddhism*, 39. Although it was a popular sutra in China, according to Dōgen's journals of his studies in China he questioned this sutra even then, and his Chinese teacher Tiantong Rujing agreed that it was probably not from India. See Kodera, *Dōgen's Formative Years in China*, 121, 232. But in "Turning the Dharma Wheel," Dōgen says that words commented on by authentic buddha ancestors, such as in this case, are to be considered an "extraordinary buddha saying." See Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 197; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 364.

19. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 198; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 118.

20. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 199; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 118.

CHAPTER 2

1. See, for example, Payne, *Re-Visioning Kamakura Buddhism*; Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*; Heine, *Shifting Shape, Shaping Text*, which explores the complex combination of the supernatural and ethics in Dogen's work; and the somewhat earlier pioneering work by Morrell, *Early Kamakura Buddhism*.

2. See Faure, "The Daruma-shū, Dōgen, and Sōtō Zen"; and Bodiford, *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*, 12–13, 32–34, 37–38, 52–54, 58–59.

3. Faure, "The Daruma-shū, Dōgen, and Sōtō Zen," 43–44.

4. See Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 30; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 1: 88–90.

5. Gregory, "Chinese Buddhist Hermeneutics," 242.

6. See Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 8–10, 62–63, 76–77. For the most comprehensive treatment in English of Five Ranks hermeneutics, see Verdu, *Dialectical Aspects in Buddhist Thought*, 115–242. For more on the Fourfold Dharmadhatu, see G. C. C. Chang, *The Buddhist Teaching of Totality*, 18–21, 136–170.

7. See Buswell, "Ch'an Hermeneutics," 231–256.

8. Thurman, "Vajra Hermeneutics," 122.

9. Kasulis, "Truth Words," 260, 271.

10. Ibid., 264.

11. Rambelli, "Texts, Talismans, and Jewels," 52.

12. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 26–27; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 24.

13. Ikkō Narasaki Roshi, foreword to Leighton and Okumura, *Dogen's Pure Standards for the Zen Community*, x.

14. Ricoeur, *Hermeneutics and the Human Sciences*, 165.

15. Ibid., 171.

16. Ibid., 176, 166, 177.

17. Ricoeur, *Figuring the Sacred*, 48–67.

18. The "ground of being" might be seen as a recent, Western metaphor. However, it fits some of the views of earth expressed by Dōgen, and certainly is in accord with Ricoeur's encouragement of metaphoric wordplay. A common Buddhist metaphor that is quite parallel is the "mind ground." An example of the latter that recalls the "ground of being" is from Dōgen's Chinese Caodong (Sōtō) precursor, Hongzhi Zhengjue (1091–1157), saying, "Recognize the mind ground dharma field that is the root source of the ten thousand forms germinating with unwithered fertility." Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 41.

19. Ricoeur, *Figuring the Sacred*, 56.

20. Ibid., 57.

21. Ibid., 60.

22. Ibid., 65.

23. See, for examples, Conze, *The Perfection of Wisdom in Eight Thousand Lines*, 15, 120–121; and Buddhist Text Translation Society, *Sutra of the Past Vows of Earth Store Bodhisattva*, 69–71, 89–92, along with many other passages.

24. Watson, *The Lotus Sutra*, 170–181; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 2: 168–202 (italics mine).

25. Tanabe and Tanabe, *The Lotus Sutra in Japanese Culture*, 2.

26. Jōdō, literally "ascending the hall," referred to here as Dharma hall discourses, was the major form of presentation in Song-period Chinese Chan temples. They were often quite brief, given in the Dharma hall by the teacher on the high seat on the altar and with the monks standing. Apparently they were the teaching form eventually favored by Dōgen, as he nearly stopped writing the longer essays of *Shōbōgenzō* after 1244 but continued using the formal jōdō talks, which were recorded in *Eihei Kōroku*, in training his monks at Eiheiji before his death in 1253.

27. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 123–124; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 46. Zafus are round sitting cushions.

28. Yunmen's response to a monk's question, "What is Buddha?," of "Kanshiketsu" has been interpreted legitimately either as a dried shitstick, a standard implement that was used as we now use toilet paper, or simply as a dried turd, an interpretation derived from Zhuangzi's usage, which is the translation in other jōdōs below, according to varied contexts. Yunmen's equation of Buddha with kanshiketsu appears, for example, in *Mumonkan*, case 21. See K. Yamada, *Gateless Gate*, 109–112. For a discussion of Dōgen's likely interpretation of Dongshan Shouchu's utterance as "sesame" rather than the usual translation of "flax," see the note to Dōgen's reference to it in "Tenzokyōkun" in Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Pure Standards for the Zen Community*, 56. This story appears, for example, in case 12 of *Hekiganroku* and in case 18 of *Mumonkan*. See T. Cleary and Cleary, *The Blue Cliff Record*, 1: 81–87; and K. Yamada, *Gateless Gate*, 96–99.

29. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 124; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 46.

30. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 93–94; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 18.

31. See Watson, *The Lotus Sutra*, 45; Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 45; Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 74; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 1: 128.

32. LaFleur, *The Karma of Words*, 87.

33. Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 29–30; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 1: 88–90.

34. LaFleur, *The Karma of Words*, 87.

35. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 14.

36. See "Shōbōgenzō Buddha-nature," in Waddell and Abe, *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 60–65; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 72–77.

37. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 111–112; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 34.

38. Tanabe, *Myōe the Dreamkeeper*, 9.

39. McMahan, *Empty Vision*, 5; italics in quote are McMahan's.

40. Tanabe, *Myōe the Dreamkeeper*, 5, 13.

41. See Taigen Dan Leighton and Kazuaki Tanahashi, trans., "Within a Dream Expressing a Dream," in Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 165–172; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 146–158.

42. Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 166, 167; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 147, 149.

43. Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 69; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 54.

44. For Myōe's dream journal, and commentary, see Tanabe, *Myōe the Dreamkeeper*, and Kawai, *The Buddhist Priest Myōe*. See further discussion of Myōe in the next chapter.

45. For further discussion of the stereotypical distinctions between Keizan and Dōgen, see Faure, *Visions of Power*, 3–4, 211–215.

46. Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 170–171; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 154–155; Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 223–224; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 2: 282.

47. I am indebted to Jan Nattier for pointing out the difference in Dōgen's reading of this passage from the original *Lotus Sutra*.

48. Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 171; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 156.

49. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 232–233; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 152–154.

50. The *Lotus Sutra* includes a number of variations on the full formula for descriptions of buddhas and their buddha fields parodied by Dōgen, including versions in chapter 12 on Devadatta and chapter 23 on the Bodhisattva Medicine King. One of the versions closest to the full formula parodied by Dōgen is the description of Ānanda's prediction in chapter 9. See Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 168–169; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 2: 124–126.

51. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 217–218; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 138. Dōgen refers frequently to ladles in *Eihei Kōroku*,

used as a term for reliable practice implements and sometimes for practitioners themselves. For other examples, jōdō 219 in 1247 begins, "Abundant with ten thousand virtues, the sitting cushions and wooden ladles are dignified." Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 226; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 146. In jōdō 320 in 1249, Dōgen refers to Śākyamuni himself as "the wooden ladle at Vulture Peak." Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 293–294; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 210.

52. Faure, *Visions of Power*, 116.

53. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 131–133; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 52–54. "Penetrating seven and accomplishing eight" is an expression Dōgen uses elsewhere that may indicate readiness to take on the ongoing work of awakening, always going beyond.

54. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 147–148; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 64–66.

55. See T. Cleary, *Book of Serenity*, 332–334, 350.

56. For the iconographic forms of Avalokiteśvara Bodhisattva, see Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*, 167–184.

57. Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 169; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 152.

CHAPTER 3

1. Y. Kim, *Tao-Sheng's Commentary on the Lotus Sutra*, 16–17.

2. Ibid., 18, 34–38; and Hurvitz, *Chih-i*, 194–197.

3. Y. Kim, *Tao-Sheng's Commentary on the Lotus Sutra*, 290.

4. Ibid.

5. Ibid.

6. Ibid., 294.

7. Ibid., 295.

8. Hurvitz, *Chih-i*, 212.

9. Ibid., 362.

10. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 25.

11. Ibid., 26.

12. Dolce, "Between Duration and Eternity," 226.

13. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 184–185.

14. Dolce, "Between Duration and Eternity," 227–228, 227.

15. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 26–27.

16. Sharf, "On the Buddha-nature of Insentient Things," section 2, second to last paragraph.

17. See Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 9, 14, 170; and Penkower, "T'ien-t'ai During the T'ang Dynasty," 371, 404, 430 n.68.

18. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 14.

19. Penkower, "T'ien-t'ai During the T'ang Dynasty," 436, 444 n.90.

20. Ibid., 540–541, 542–543. Penkower interprets "vacated place" in terms of the bodhisattvas taking the position of Śākyamuni after he is gone. However, given the context, I believe that Zhanran is referring to the bodhisattvas' "empty space" under the ground, from which they finally emerge to help all future beings. As Zhanran says, thus "we all" receive this teaching.

21. See Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 29–30; Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 59–60; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 1: 88–90.

22. Penkower, "T'ien-t'ai During the T'ang Dynasty," 550.

23. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 76–77, 395 n.72.

24. Dolce, "Between Duration and Eternity," 229–230.

25. Kamata, *Chūgoku no Zen*, 69.

26. J. C. H. Wu, *The Golden Age of Zen*, 263.

27. Ferguson, *Zen's Chinese Heritage*, 287–289, 309–312.

28. Ibid., 367–370; and see T. Cleary and Cleary, *Zen Lore from the* Source Mirror.

29. Ding-Hwa Hsieh, "Images of Women in Ch'an Buddhist Literature of the Sung Period," in Gregory and Getz, *Buddhism in the Sung*, 157.

30. From the epitaph on the pagoda of Linji (d. 866; Rinzai in Japanese), founder of the lineage that bears his name; see Watson, *The Zen Teachings of Master Lin-Chi*, 127.

31. See Heine, *Dōgen and the Koan Tradition*.

32. See LaFleur, *The Karma of Words*, 82–85.

33. Saigyō was also said to have met and practiced with Myōe. See Watson, *Saigyō*, 5.

34. LaFleur, *The Karma of Words*, 3–4; also in LaFleur, *Awesome Nightfall*, 112.

35. LaFleur, *Awesome Nightfall*, 149.

36. Tanabe, *Myōe the Dreamkeeper*, 50.

37. See Kawai, *The Buddhist Priest Myōe*.

38. Tanabe, *Myōe the Dreamkeeper*, 161. Most but not all of the Dream Diary has been preserved. It is not always clear where dreams begin or end and what is meditative vision. In this case, the initial reference to chapter 16 may occur during a dream, or may have been a waking event preparatory to the dream, during which Myōe also received offerings and then gave them to others, along with commencing daily chanting of the *Lotus Sutra*.

39. Ibid., 71.

40. See ibid., 66–69, 71–72; and Morrell, *Early Kamakura Buddhism*, 47–48, 103–122. This event was the subject of a Nō play by Zeami, a translation of which is included in the Morrell citation.

41. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 41.

42. A. Matsunaga, *The Buddhist Philosophy of Assimilation*, 274.

43. Unno, "The Body of Time and the Discourse of Precepts," 129.

44. Hirota, *No Abode*, 89–90, 167; see also 168.

45. *Shōbōgenzō*, "Taking Refuge in the Three Treasures" ("Kie Buppōsō hō"), in Yokoi and Victoria, *Zen Master Dōgen*, 129–130; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 260.

46. Hori, *St. Nichiren's Kanjin Honzon-shō*, 2. See also Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 258–259.

47. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 259.

48. Ibid., 340–342.

49. Hori, *St. Nichiren's Kanjin Honzon-shō*, 94.

50. Ibid., 94–96.

51. Ibid., 100.

52. Ibid.

53. Dolce, "Between Duration and Eternity," 230.

54. Ibid., 231.

55. Ibid., 230, 232.

56. For example, in Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 249, the chapter title is given as "Revelation of the [Eternal] Life of the Tathagata," with "eternal" bracketed.

57. Personal communications with *Lotus Sutra* scholars Jacqueline Stone and Jan Nattier, as well as Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 25.

58. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 24–27, 184–185.

59. Ibid., 39.

60. Hori, *St. Nichiren's Kanjin Honzon-shō*, 156.

61. Hori, *St. Nichiren's Kaimoku-shō*, 158–160. For more on the archetypal bodhisattvas, see Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*.

62. Hori, *St. Nichiren's Kanjin Honzon-shō*, 158.

63. Dolce, "Between Duration and Eternity," 232, 233.

64. Ibid., 234.

65. Hori, *St. Nichiren's Kanjin Honzon-shō*, 136, 140.

66. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 260.

67. Dōgen does at times refer to the mappō in passing as an expedient to encourage and exhort his monks to deepen their practice, but he never allows doctrinal credence to mappō, nor to the view that true awakening was now impossible in this degenerate age.

68. Stone, *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*, 254.

69. Waddell, *The Essential Writings of Zen Master Hakuin*, 33.

70. Ibid. This writing is only one of a number of accounts by Hakuin of his awakening with the *Lotus Sutra*.

71. See, for example, his account of Śākyamuni in "The Calm Mind Beating Out the Dust," in Shaw, *The Embossed Tea Kettle*, 165–169.

72. Yampolsky, *The Zen Master Hakuin*, 87, 88; see also Shaw, *The Embossed Tea Kettle*, 110–111.

73. Yampolsky, *The Zen Master Hakuin*, 92; Shaw, *The Embossed Tea Kettle*, 115.

74. Yampolsky, *The Zen Master Hakuin*, 95; see also Shaw, *The Embossed Tea Kettle*, 117.

75. Abé and Haskel, *Great Fool*, xiii; see also 21.

76. Ibid., 65.

77. For Ryōkan's long poem, "On Reading Eihei Kōroku," see Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 69–71; and Abé and Haskel, *Great Fool*, 164–165. For some of Ryōkan's other reflections on Buddhist topics, see Abé and Haskel, *Great Fool*, 240–253.

78. Abé and Haskel, *Great Fool*, 71–73.

79. Toyohara, *Ryōkan Zenshū*, 1: 457–497.

80. Ibid., 482. All translations of these Ryōkan verses on the *Lotus Sutra* are by Taigen Dan Leighton and Kazuaki Tanahashi. Numbers in parentheses after the poems are their sequence among the 122.

81. Ibid., 483.

82. Ibid. Divine sage (*shinsen*) is an epithet for Śākyamuni. The "Mystic Island" is Hōrai, a legendary Daoist island said to impart eternal youth, but now unnecessary for long-lived Śākyamuni or, as Ryōkan implies here, for his devotees.

83. Ibid. Following are the remaining poems in this series by Ryōkan related to chapters 15 and 16, all translated by Taigen Dan Leighton and Kazuaki Tanahashi. See ibid., 481–484.

For the chapter on Springing Forth from the Ground:

(77) All of this great assembly begins to call out
At the myriad thousands [of bodhisattvas] emerging from the ground.
Intending to show the Tathāgata's vast life-span,
They cause a great many people to ask questions.

(78) In the past we have wandered through the world
Without seeing a single person resembling those now emerging.
As to the lands and their names from whence they've come,
Explain each in detail for us.

For the chapter on the Life Span of the Tathāgata:

(79) Not very far from the city of Bodhgaya
I suffered ascetic practice for six years before realizing awakening.
If someone asks me about that period,
Five hundred specks of dust are better than that.
[alternate last line:] I immediately forgot all about it.

"Realizing awakening" in verse 79 is *shō bodai*, which might be read as confirming or verifying enlightenment.

> (84) Encountering poisons and meeting afflictions,
> Both day and night they waste, becoming deranged.
> The physician must go somewhere unknown
> For a long time, but his good medicine remains in the billion worlds.

84. For a biography of Suzuki, see Chadwick, *Crooked Cucumber*.

85. For Suzuki's Sandōkai lectures, see S. Suzuki, *Branching Streams Flow in the Darkness*. See also Carl Bielefeldt, Griffith Foulk, Taigen Leighton, and Shohaku Okumura, trans., "Harmony of Difference and Equality," in Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 74–75.

86. Personal communication with David Chadwick, April 2005. I have consulted, and quote in what follows, the transcriptions of these approximately twenty-seven lectures transcribed by Brian Fikes and Bill Redican; S. Suzuki, "Lectures on the Lotus Sutra."

87. Ibid., Oct. 20, 1969.

88. Ibid., Oct. 21, 1968.

89. Ibid., unspecified date from Oct. 1968.

90. Ibid., Oct. 21, 1968.

91. Ibid., unspecified date from Oct. 1968.

92. Ibid.

93. Ibid., Oct. 20, 1968.

94. Ibid., unspecified date from Oct. 1968.

95. Ibid., Oct. 20, 1969.

96. As further anecdotal evidence of the enduring importance of the *Lotus Sutra* in the Sōtō tradition that Dōgen founded, I recall an incident when I was a new student at Tassajara monastery in fall 1983. Among the other residents in their first practice period there was a Japanese monk, Gengo Akiba. He had previously spent a number of years and had held a significant training position at Eiheiji, the monastery that Dōgen founded and still one of two headquarter temples of the Japanese Sōtō school. As of this writing, Akiba has become the bishop of the Japanese Sōtō school in North America. At the end of that intensive three-month practice period I asked him what he missed most at Tassajara from Eiheiji. There were a great many differences he might have cited (such as lack of a monks' hall where monks sleep as well as do zazen and take meals). But Akiba immediately responded that the one thing he most missed was daily chanting of the verse closing of chapter 25 on the saving powers of the bodhisattva of compassion. For more details on the context of that chapter and differences between Tassajara and Eiheiji, see Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*, 178–181.

97. See versions for liturgical use in Soto Zen Text Project, *Soto School Scriptures for Daily Services and Practice*, 19–23, 38–41, and for roman letter transliterations of the Japanese, 97–101, 114–117. In an informal survey of the approximately 125 teachers registered in the American Zen Teachers Association in May 2005, only six reported that their centers regularly chant either of these excerpts from the *Lotus Sutra*.

CHAPTER 4

1. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 178; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 260. For the sutra passage, see Watson, *The Lotus Sutra*, 231; Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 255; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 3: 32.

2. Yokoi and Victoria, *Zen Master Dōgen*, 129–130. See also Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 178; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 260.

3. Based on the detailed table in the appendix "Lotus Sutra References," in Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 293–321. Some rather minor or extraneous references are included in this table, but I believe the overall proportions of *Shōbōgenzō* citations for each *Lotus Sutra* chapter are generally reliable, for significant citations as well.

4. See Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 52; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 1: 68. Compared to the Sanskrit original, which simply denotes plural "buddhas," Kumārajīva's rendition emphasizes the relational aspect of a buddha "together with" a buddha. I am indebted to Jan Nattier for pointing out this shift from the Sanskrit by Kumārajīva.

5. For "Yuibutsu Yobutsu," see Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 161–167; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 450–465.

6. For "Hokke-Ten-Hokke," see Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 203–220; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 429–449. I have also consulted Tanahashi and Wenger, "Dharma Blossoms Turn Dharma Blossoms." This essay is not included in the earliest seventy-five essay versions of *Shōbōgenzō*, edited by Dōgen's direct disciples Senne and Kyōgō. However, it does appear in the sixty-essay version edited by Giun in the mid-fourteenth century and is included in the ninety-five-essay modern version. One other *Shōbōgenzō* essay that centers to some significant extent on the *Lotus Sutra* (although less exclusively then "Hokke-Ten-Hokke") is "The Genuine Form of All Things" ("Shohō Jissō") from 1243. But this latter essay concerns the teaching of the reality of suchness in chapter 2 of the *Lotus Sutra* and has no significant references to chapters 15 or 16 of the sutra. See Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 79–92; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 432–455.

7. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 208; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 433.

8. Author's translation from Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 447; see also Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 219.

9. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 219–220; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 447–448.

10. Takasaki, "Dōgen Zenji to Hokkekyō," 20.

11. Ibid., 21.

12. Kagamishima, "Dōgen Zenji no Hokkekyō-kan," 35.

13. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 211; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 438.

14. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 215–216; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 443.

15. For Dōgen's teaching on Dharma position (*hō-i*), see H. Kim, *Eihei Dōgen*, 154–158.

16. Ibid., 155.

17. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 261; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 180.

18. See "Purification of the Buddha-Field," chapter 1 of the *Vimalakirti Sutra*, in Thurman, *The Holy Teachings of Vimalakirti*, 10–19. See also Lamotte, *The Teaching of Vimalakirti*, 1–27, especially 275–284 n.1: The Buddhakṣetras.

19. Lamotte, *The Teaching of Vimalakirti*, 276.

20. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

21. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 133–134; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 54. For the sutra passage, see Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 242; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 3: 28.

22. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 134; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 54.

23. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 21–22; Bodiford, *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*, 52.

24. See Bodiford, *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*, 51–64, 81–92; and Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 19–25.

25. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

26. For "Space," see Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 201–204; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 406–414. For another commentary by Dōgen on the story that follows, see Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 571–572; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 4: 216–218. For my commentary on *Shōbōgenzō*, "Kokū," see Leighton, "Dōgen's Cosmology of Space and the Practice of Self-Fulfillment."

27. See Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 201; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 406–407; Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 571; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 4: 216.

28. Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 202; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 409.

29. Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 202–203; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 410–411.

30. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 217–218; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 445.

31. Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 233; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 2: 310; Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 216; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 443.

32. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 216; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 443–444.

33. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 217; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 444.

34. Sōtō Zen Text Project, *Soto School Scriptures for Daily Services and Practice*, 28–29, 106–107.

35. Reeves, "Bodhisattvas of the Earth," 10. Reeves's comments may be a response, at least to some extent, to an earlier version of a portion of this work, which I presented in a paper at the eighth International Lotus Sutra Conference, Tokyo, Risshō Kōseikai, 2002, organized by Reeves. That paper is published, in slightly adapted form, as Leighton, "Dōgen's Appropriation of *Lotus Sutra* Ground and Space."

36. See Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 9–21; T. Cleary, *Shōbōgenzō*, 64–75; and Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 266–283.

37. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 12; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 270. Dōgen questions the authenticity of the *Śūrangama Sūtra* in his student journal from China, *Hōkyō-ki*, and in *Shōbōgenzō*, "Turning the Dharma Wheel," where he nevertheless uses phrases from it commented on by previous masters. See chapter 1, n.18 for references and discussion.

38. I thank Gene Reeves for our conversation in which he emphasized the importance of this name of the sutra.

39. This quote, and its use by Dōgen, is susceptible to various interpretations, including the one that Nishijima claims that Dōgen favors: to see the triple world just as do those in it. But a contrary interpretation is that the Buddha does not see the triple world as do common people. For Dōgen's citation, see Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 17, especially the explication in n.49. See also T. Cleary, *Shōbōgenzō*, 72; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 278. For the *Lotus Sutra* passage, see Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 251; Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 239; Watson, *The Lotus Sutra*, 226; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 3: 18.

40. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 11; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 268–269.

41. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 12; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 270.

42. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 12, italics by Nishijima and Cross; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 271.

43. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 15; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 274–275.

44. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 20; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 282.

45. Author's translation from Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 283. For alternate renderings, see Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 21; and T. Cleary, *Shōbōgenzō*, 74.

46. The *Daśabhūmika Sūtra* is included as one of the chapters in the *Avatamsaka Sutra*. See T. Cleary, *The Flower Ornament Scripture*, 695–811; Honda, *Annotated Translation of the Daśabhūmika Sūtra*.

47. Nattier, "The Lotus Sutra." Much of the relevant material in this unpublished paper now appears in Nattier, "A Greater Awakening."

48. Nattier, "The Lotus Sutra," 2.

49. See Groner, "The Lotus Sutra and Saichō's Interpretation of the Realization of Buddhahood with This Very Body," 53–69.

50. See, for example, the 1239 *Shōbōgenzō* essay "This Very Mind Is Buddha" ("Soku Shin Ze Butsu"), in Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 49–55; and Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 140–150.

51. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 220; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 447.

52. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 219; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 446–447.

53. Dylan, "My Back Pages," in *Lyrics*, 125–126.

54. See Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 46–58. Translations of "Uji" appear in Waddell and Abe, *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 47–58; T. Cleary, *Shōbōgenzō*, 102–110; Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 76–83; and Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 109–118. Book-length treatments focused on "Uji" and Dōgen's philosophy of time are Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, which includes a translation of "Uji"; and Stambaugh, *Impermanence Is Buddha Nature*. See also Leighton, "Being Time through Deep Time."

55. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 45–46; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 409–410.

56. "Document of Heritage" ("Shishō"), a 1243 *Shōbōgenzō* essay, in Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 188; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 373.

57. Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 188; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 373–374.

58. Taigen Dan Leighton and Kazuaki Tanahashi, trans., "The Awesome Presence of Active Buddhas," in Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 79; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 151. For "Gyōbutsu Īgi", see also Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 33–53.

59. See, for example, "Going beyond Buddha" ("Bukkōjōji") from 1242, in Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 203–210; Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 107–118; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 128–145.

60. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 80; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 153.

61. For this full dialogue between Nanyue and Huineng, which extended over eight years, along with a variety of comments by Dōgen, see Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 328–329, 435–436, 575–576; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 238–240, 4: 70–72, 220–222.

62. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 81; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 155.

63. See Watson, *The Lotus Sutra*, 230; Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 254; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 3: 30.

64. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 83; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 157–158.

65. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 85; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 161; see also Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 40.

66. For scriptural references, iconographic forms, and the archetypal qualities of Maitreya Bodhisattva, see Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*, 241–274.

67. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 86; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 162–163.

68. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 87; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 164.

69. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 90; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 169.

70. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 91–92; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 171.

71. See Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 203; Watson, *The Lotus Sutra*, 179; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 2: 194.

72. See Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 204; Watson, *The Lotus Sutra*, 180; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 2: 198.

73. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 94; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 176. See also Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 50–51.

74. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 95; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 178.

75. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 345–346; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 258.

76. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 432–433; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 4: 68.

77. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 323; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 234.

78. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 173; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 90–92.

79. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 174; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 92. "The atoms in five hundred worlds" is from the sutra's much longer description of the vast number of atoms to which the Buddha's life span is equal. See Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 237–238; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 3: 12–14.

80. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 230–231; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 150–152.

81. Cook, *How to Raise an Ox*, 126. See also Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 277–280.

82. Cook, *How to Raise an Ox*, 127; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 350.

83. Cook, *How to Raise an Ox*, 127; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 350.

84. Cook, *How to Raise an Ox*, 127–128; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 351.

85. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 267; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 180.

86. "Meeting Buddha" ("Kenbutsu"), in Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 198–199; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 228.

87. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 202; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 122; Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 227; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 2: 294.

88. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 94; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 123; see also Cook, *How to Raise an Ox*, 78.

89. Kagamishima, "Dōgen Zenji no Hokkekyō-kan," 35.

90. For "Shukke," see Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 111–114; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 42–51.

91. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 114; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 50.

92. This percentage is based on the chronology of Dōgen's life (and writings) in H. Kim, *Eihei Dōgen*, 239–241.

93. See Dōgen's "The Dharma for Taking Food" ("Fushukuhanpō") in Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Pure Standards for the Zen Community*, 89; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 6: 54–56. For the Chinese ten names, without the *Lotus Sutra*, see Yifa, *The Origins of Buddhist Monastic Codes in China*, 12.

94. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 638; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 4: 288.

95. See Yusa, "The *Lotus Sutra* and Dōgen's Zen Hermeneutics," 1. See www.ac.wwu.edu/~yusa/TheLotusSutra&DogenZenHermeneutics.htm. The *Kenzeiki*, written in 1472, is "The Annals of Kenzei"; Kenzei was the fourteenth abbot of Eiheiji. For Dōgen's death, see also Bodiford, *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*, 35. Current Japanese Sōtō scholars suspect that the "Lotus Sutra Hermitage" story is a fiction, according to a personal communication from Prof. Seijun Ishii of Komazawa University. Nevertheless, the legendary story's place in Sōtō lore emphasizes ongoing awareness of the connection between Dōgen and the *Lotus Sutra*.

96. Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 298; Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 288; Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 3: 158–160.

CHAPTER 5

1. Reeves, "The Parable of the Good Physician," 16.

2. H. Kim, *Eihei Dōgen*, 9.

3. The elephant ridden by Samantabhadra is more fully described in the "closing sutra" to the *Lotus Sutra*, "The Sutra of Meditation on the Bodhisattva of Universal Virtue." See Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 347–370.

4. Saunders, *Mudrā*, 80–84. See also Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*, 91–92.

5. Strong, *The Buddha*, 72.

6. Saunders, *Mudrā*, 82.

7. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Pure Standards for the Zen Community*, 146, 190 n.61; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 6: 120.

8. See Yifa, *The Origins of Buddhist Monastic Codes in China*, 166–167. There are indeed references to earth spirits elsewhere in *Chanyuan Qinggui*. See, for example, Yifa, 137.

9. See Faure, *Visions of Power*, 97–101, 154–156.

10. From Grapard, "Nature and Culture in Japan," cited in Malcolm David Eckel, "Is There a Buddhist Philosophy of Nature?," in Tucker and Williams, *Buddhism and Ecology*, 332–333.

11. Grapard, "Flying Mountains and Walkers of Emptiness," 42. This *Kyoto Journal* issue was republished as Einarsen, *The Sacred Mountains of Asia*.

12. The hypothesis of Tendai Hakusan support for the move is from Imaeda Aishin. See Heine, "The Dōgen Canon," 66–69.

13. Ibid.; Bodiford, *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*, 114–115; and Faure, *Visions of Power*, 182, 186–187.

14. Heine, "The Dōgen Canon," 68–69.

15. For Jizō Bodhisattva, see De Visser, *The Bodhisattva Ti-Tsang (Jizo) in China and Japan*, still a fine, useful study despite being very early in Western Buddhist studies; Bays, *Jizo Bodhisattva*; and Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*, 211–240. For a translation of the primary sutra source for this bodhisattva, see Buddhist Text Translation Society, *Sutra of the Past Vows of Earth Store Bodhisattva*. This was a popular sutra in China, probably of Chinese or Khotanese origin; see Williams, *Mahāyāna Buddhism*, 241–242.

16. Buddhist Text Translation Society, *Sutra of the Past Vows of Earth Store Bodhisattva*, 5–11, 23–28.

17. Ibid., 6–11, 24–28.

18. For the range of Jizō's folklore and salvific function, see De Visser, *The Bodhisattva Ti-Tsang (Jizo) in China and Japan*, 84–98, 107–139; Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*, 216–217, 220–222, 227–230; Gomez, "From the Extraordinary to the Ordinary," 148–149, 165, 182–183; and P. Yamada, "The Worship of Jizo."

19. See A. Matsunaga, *The Buddhist Philosophy of Assimilation*, 235 n.9, 246–247. For a full treatment of this bodhisattva figure, see De Visser, *The Bodhisattva Akasagarbha (Kokuzo) in China and Japan*.

20. Abé, *The Weaving of Mantra*, 74.

21. Bodiford, *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*, 14.

22. Ibid., 14, 59.

23. Faure, *Visions of Power*, 84.

24. See Bodiford, *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*, 14, 71–73, 88, 91–92.

25. See Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22–24; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16–18.

26. Gregory, "Chinese Buddhist Hermeneutics," 242.

27. See Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

28. Reeves, "Bodhisattvas of the Earth," 10.

29. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 215; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 442.

30. McMahan, *Empty Vision*, 69.

31. Ibid., 76, 77.

32. Ibid., 73, 74, 77.

33. This story is case 19 in the popular *Gateless Barrier* kōan collection (*Wumenguan* in Chinese; *Mumonkan* in Japanese). For other renditions and commentary, see Shibayama, *The Gateless Barrier*, 140–147; T. Cleary, *Unlocking the Zen Koan*, 94–98; and Aitken, *The Gateless Barrier*, 126–131.

34. See Nishijima, *Master Dōgen's Shinji Shōbōgenzō*, 28; Tanahashi and Loori, *The True Dharma Eye*, 26–27.

35. See Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 249–250.

36. See Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 664–665.

37. Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 45.

38. Author's translation from Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 447; see also "Hokke-Ten-Hokke," in Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 219.

39. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 261; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 180.

40. Dharma hall discourse 91, in Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 134; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 54.

41. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 83; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 157–158.

42. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 139, 169; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 58, 88. The line is from the commentary to case 77 of *Hekiganroku*; see T. Cleary and Cleary, *The Blue Cliff Record*, 3: 507.

43. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 361; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 272.

44. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 94; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 123; see also Cook, *How to Raise an Ox*, 78.

45. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 215–216; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 442–443.

46. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 11; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 268–269.

47. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 196; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 114.

48. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

49. Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 202–203; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 410–411.

50. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 217–218; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 445.

51. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 216, italics by Nishijima and Cross; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 443.

52. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 95; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 178.

53. See H. Kim, *Eihei Dōgen*, 16–17, 21, 107, 143; and Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, 22, 56, 69.

54. McMahan, *Empty Vision*, 80.

55. See LaFleur, *The Karma of Words*, 82–85.

56. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 95; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 178.

57. Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, 23.

58. T. Cleary, *The Flower Ornament Scripture*, 1029.

59. Ibid.

60. Ibid.

61. Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, 155.

62. Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 79–80; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 52–53.

63. T. Cleary, *Entry into the Inconceivable*, 138–139, 39.

64. For a full treatment of Maitreya as archetypal bodhisattva, see Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*, 241–274. See also Sponberg and Hardacre, *Maitreya*.

65. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 85; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 161; see also Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 40.

66. Thurman, *The Holy Teachings of Vimalakirti*, 120 n.1.

67. A. Matsunaga, *The Buddhist Philosophy of Assimilation*, 240.

68. See Leighton, *Faces of Compassion*, 255–258.

69. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 118; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 40–42.

70. See Sadakata, *Buddhist Cosmology*, 99–110; and Ricard and Trinh, *The Quantum and Lotus*, 33.

71. See Sadakata, *Buddhist Cosmology*, 96–97; Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 91 n.12.

72. Morrell, *Early Kamakura Buddhism*, 144 n.144.

73. Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 184–185; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 160.

74. For the lack of historicity of the recognized Indian Zen ancestors, see Yampolsky, *The Platform Sutra of the Sixth Patriarch*, 1–11, including the helpful tables on 8 and 9.

75. See also the translation ending, "Do not pass your days and nights in vain," in Bielefeldt et al., "Harmony of Difference and Equality," in Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 75.

76. Ibid.

77. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 293; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 3: 208.

78. Taigen Leighton and Kazuaki Tanahashi, trans., "Song of the Grass-Roof Hermitage," in Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 72–73.

79. Leighton and Wu, *Cultivating the Empty Field*, 32, 45.

80. Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, 157; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 50. Waddell and Abe translate *kyōraku* (or *keireki*; 経歴) as "seriatim passage," and describe it as "a discontinuous continuity." See Waddell and Abe, *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 51. Tanahashi renders these key sentences as, "The time-being has the quality of flowing. So-called today flows into tomorrow, today flows into yesterday, yesterday flows into today. And today flows into today, tomorrow flows into tomorrow. . . . Flowing is a quality of time." See Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 78.

81. Waddell and Abe, *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 49; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 47.

82. Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, 51 (Heine's italics).

83. Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 81; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 55.

84. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

85. Waddell and Abe, *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 53; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 52.

86. Waddell and Abe, *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 53; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 52.

87. Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, 3–4.

88. Ibid.

89. Ibid., 105.

90. Ibid., 125, 136.

91. Author's translation from Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 447; see also Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 219.

92. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 216; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 443.

93. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 216; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 443.

94. *Shōbōgenzō*, "Document of Heritage" ("Shishō"), in Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 188; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 373.

95. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 79; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 151.

96. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 80 (Tanahashi's italics); Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 153.

97. Cook, *How to Raise an Ox*, 127; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 350.

98. Cook, *How to Raise an Ox*, 127–128; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 351.

99. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

AFTERWORD

1. For a more recent, clear study, well-informed on both sides (though from Tibetan rather than East Asian Buddhism), see Ricard and Thuan, *The Quantum and Lotus*.

2. For a discussion of the great variety of pitfalls that can result from applying comparative thinking to the study of religions, see Smith, "In Comparison a Magic Dwells," in *Imagining Religion*, 19–35.

3. For detailed presentations on string theory aimed at laypersons, see Greene, *The Elegant Universe*; Greene's follow-up work, *The Fabric of the Cosmos*; and Susskind, *The Cosmic Landscape*.

4. Greene, *The Fabric of the Cosmos*, ix.

5. Greene, *The Elegant Universe*, 6.

6. Ibid.

7. Ricard and Thuan, *The Quantum and Lotus*, 68.

8. Tanahashi, *Enlightenment Unfolds*, 202; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 409.

9. Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

10. Tanahashi, *Beyond Thinking*, 95; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 178.

11. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 217–218; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 445.

12. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 216; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 443.

13. See Waddell and Abe, *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 49, 51; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 47, 50; Heine, *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*, 155.

14. Greene, *The Fabric of the Cosmos*, 129–130 (Greene's italics).

15. Susskind, *The Cosmic Landscape*, 90.

16. Ibid., 93.

17. For example, in Dōgen's "Talk on Wholehearted Practice of the Way." See Okumura and Leighton, *The Wholehearted Way*, 22; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 16.

18. Susskind, *The Cosmic Landscape*, 94.

19. The series of books on Religions of the World and Ecology was edited by Mary Evelyn Tucker and John Grim for the Harvard University Center for the Study of World Religions.

20. Badiner, *Dharma Gaia*.

21. Among Gary Snyder's many works related to this field, probably most germane are *Earth House Hold*; *The Real Work*; *Mountains and Rivers without End*; and especially a true masterpiece, *The Practice of the Wild*. Systems theory scholar Joanna Macy, whose Buddhist context is primarily Tibetan and Theravadin from Śri Lanka, has written a number of fine books applicable to Buddhism and the environment, of which perhaps most notable is *World as Lover, World as Self*. See also Kaza, *The Attentive Heart*.

22. Odin, "The Japanese Concept of Nature and Aldo Leopold," 92–93.

23. Ibid., 93.

24. Snyder, "Mountains Hidden in Mountains," 161.

25. Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 184–204. For translations, see Bielefeldt, "Mountains and Waters Sutra"; T. Cleary, *Shōbōgenzō*, 87–101; Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 97–107; Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 167–179.

26. Snyder, *The Practice of the Wild*, 101–102. For the passage from Dōgen, see Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 103; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 2: 195.

27. Snyder, "Mountains Hidden in Mountains," 163–164.

28. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 1: 216; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 443.

29. Macy, *World as Lover, World as Self*, 208–234. See also Leighton, "Being Time through Deep Time."

30. Macy, *World as Lover, World as Self*, 212–213.

31. Williams, *Mahayana Buddhism*, 45.

32. Odin, "The Japanese Concept of Nature and Aldo Leopold," 90.

33. See Tanahashi, *Moon in a Dewdrop*, 44–48; T. Cleary, *Shōbōgenzō*, 117–120; Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 419–428.

34. A helpful and provocative recent analysis is Ives, "What's Compassion Got to Do with It?" Among other relevant works are Loy, *A Buddhist History of the West* and *The Great Awakening*; and Jones, *Beyond Optimism*.

35. See, for example, Kasulis, "Zen as a Social Ethics of Responsiveness"; Wright, "*Satori* and the Moral Dimension of Enlightenment"; Park, "Wisdom, Compassion, and Zen Social Ethics"; and Ives, "Not Buying In to Words and Letters."

36. Parkes, "Voices of Mountains, Trees, and Rivers," 122, 123–124.

37. Dylan, "It's Alright, Ma (I'm Only Bleeding)," in *Lyrics*, 157.

38. For Dōgen's strong emphasis on precepts, see Bodiford, *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*, 33–34, 169–172; H. Kim, *Eihei Dōgen*, 181–182, 203–229; and Heine, *Shifting Shape, Shaping Text*, 52–59, 105–129.

39. See Heine, *Did Dōgen Go to China?*, 202–204, 206–209.

40. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 390; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 4: 24.

41. Leighton and Okumura, *Dōgen's Extensive Record*, 395; Kosaka and Suzuki, *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu*, 4: 30.

42. Nishijima and Cross, *Master Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*, 3: 267 (italics added); Y. Mizuno, *Shōbōgenzō*, 4: 180–181. For the *Lotus Sutra* passage, see Sakamoto and Iwamoto, *Myōhō Rengekyō*, 3: 36; Hurvitz, *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*, 244; Katō et al., *The Threefold Lotus Sutra*, 256.

43. H. Kim, *Eihei Dōgen*, 9.

44. Eliot, "Burnt Norton," in *Four Quartets*, 13.

45. Eliot, "The Dry Salvages," in *Four Quartets*, 44.

Bibliography

WORKS IN CHINESE OR JAPANESE

Hung-chih Cheng-chueh. *Hung-chih Ch'an Shih Kuang Lu* [Extensive record of Chan Master Hongzhi]. In *Taisho Shinshu Daizokyo*, vol. 48, no. 2001. Tokyo: Taisho Issaikyo Kankokai, 1924–1933, 73–78, 98–100.

Ikeda Rosan. "Hokkekyō to Dōgen Zenji" ["Zen Master Dōgen and the Lotus Sutra"]. In *Bukkyogaku Kenkyukai*. Tokyo: Komazawa Daigaku Gakuin, 1993.

Kagamishima, Genryū. *Dōgen Zenji Inyo Kyoten: Goroku no Kenkyu* [Study of Zen Master Dōgen and the sutras and recorded sayings]. Tokyo: Mokujisha, 1965.

———. "Dōgen Zenji no Hokkekyō-kan" ["Zen Master Dōgen's view of the Lotus Sutra"]. *Daihōrin*, 33, no. 8 (1966): 26–31.

Kamata, Shigeo. *Chūgoku no Zen* [Zen in China]. Tokyo: Kōdansha, 1980.

Kosaka Kiyu and Suzuki Kakuzen, eds. *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu* [Complete collected writings of Zen Master Dōgen]. 7 vols. Tokyo: Shunjusha, 1989.

Mizuno, Yaoko, ed. *Shōbōgenzō* [True Dharma eye treasury]. 4 vols. Tokyo: Iwanami Shoten, 1993.

Ōkubo Dōshū, ed. *Dōgen Zenji Zenshu* [Complete collected writings of Zen Master Dōgen]. 2 vols. Tokyo: Chikuma Shobo, 1970.

Sakamoto Yukio and Iwamoto Yutaka, eds. *Myōhō Rengekyō* [Wondrous Dharma Lotus Sutra]. Chinese/Japanese edition. 3 vols. Trans. Kumarajiva. Tokyo: Iwanami Bunko, 1996.

Ta-ch'uan P'u-chih, ed. *Wu Teng Hui Yuan* [Five lamps merged in the source]. Taipei: Guang Wen bookstore, 1971. (Edited in the 13th century)

Takasaki Jikidō. "Dōgen Zenji to Hokkekyō: Hokke-Ten to Ten-Hokke" ["Zen Master Dōgen and the Lotus Sutra: The Lotus Sutra turning and turning the Lotus Sutra"]. *Sansho*, no. 427 (1988): 18–26.

Tao Yuan, ed. *Chingte Ch'uanteng Lu* [*Keitoku Dentoroku* in Japanese; Jingde transmission of the lamp]. In *Taisho Shinshu Daizokyo*, vol. 51, pp. 196–467. Tokyo: Taisho Issaikyo Kankokai, 1924–1933.

Toyohara, Tōgō, ed. *Ryōkan Zenshū* [Complete collected writings of Ryōkan]. Vol. 1 of 2. Tokyo: Shuppansha, 1959.

Yamauchi Shunyō. "Dōgen Zenji to Hokkekyō" ["Zen Master Dōgen and the Lotus Sutra"]. *Sōtō-shuho* 63, no. 10 (1978).

Yanagida Seizan. "Jikan" ["Time"]. In *Kozan Nihon Jisho*, vol. 4. Tokyo: Daito Shuppansha.

Yuan Chi, ed. *Hsu Ch'uan Teng Lu* [Later record of the transmission of the lamp]. (Compiled in the 14th century). In *Taisho Shinshu Daizokyo*, vol. 51, no. 2077. Tokyo: Taisho Issaikyo Kankokai, 1924–1933.

WORKS IN ENGLISH

LOTUS SUTRA AND GENERAL MAHĀYĀNA TEXTS AND COMMENTARIES

Abé, Ryūichi. *The Weaving of Mantra: Kūkai and the Construction of Esoteric Buddhist Discourse*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1999.

Adolphson, Mikael. *The Gates of Power: Monks, Courtiers, and Warriors in Premodern Japan*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 2000.

Bays, Jan Chozen. *Jizo Bodhisattva: Modern Healing and Traditional Buddhist Thought*. Boston: Tuttle, 2002.

Birnbaum, Raoul. *The Healing Buddha*. Boston: Shambhala, 1989.

Buddhist Text Translation Society. *Buddha Speaks the Brahma Net Sutra: The Ten Major and Forty-eight Minor Bodhisattva Precepts*. Trans. Bhikshuni Heng Tao. Talmage, CA: Dharma Realm Buddhist University, 1982.

———. *Sutra of the Past Vows of Earth Store Bodhisattva*. Trans. Bhikshunis Heng Hsien, Heng Ch'ih, and Upasaka Kuo Jung Epstein. Talmage, CA: Dharma Realm Buddhist University, 1982.

Chang, Garma C. C. *The Buddhist Teaching of Totality: The Philosophy of Hwa Yen Buddhism*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1971.

———, ed. *A Treasury of Mahayana Sutras: Selections from the Maharatnakuta Sutra*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1983.

Chappell, David, ed. *Buddhist and Taoist Practice in Medieval Chinese Society, Buddhist and Taoist Studies II*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1987.

Ch'en Kenneth. *Buddhism in China: A Historical Survey*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1964.

———. *The Chinese Transformation of Buddhism*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1973.

Chien, Cheng Bhikshu, trans. *Manifestation of the Tathagata: Buddhahood According to the Avatamsaka Sutra*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 1993.

Christensen, J. A. *Nichiren: Leader of Buddhist Reformation in Japan*. Fremont, CA: Jain Publishing, 1981.

Cleary, Thomas, trans. *Buddhist Yoga: A Comprehensive Course*. Boston: Shambhala, 1995.

———, trans. *Entry into the Inconceivable: An Introduction to Hua Yen Buddhism*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1983.

———, trans. *Entry into the Realm of Reality: A Translation of the Gandavyuha, the Final Book of the Avatamsaka Sutra*. Boston: Shambhala, 1987.

———, trans. *Entry into the Realm of Reality, The Guide: A Commentary on the "Gandhavyuha" by Li Tongxuan*. Boston: Shambhala, 1989.

———, trans. *The Flower Ornament Scripture: A Translation of the Avatamsaka Sutra*. Boston: Shambhala, 1984–1993.

———, trans. *Stopping and Seeing: A Comprehensive Course in Buddhist Meditation by Chih-I*. Boston: Shambhala, 1997.

Conze, Edward, trans. *The Perfection of Wisdom in Eight Thousand Lines and Its Verse Summary*. Bolinas, CA: Four Seasons Foundation, 1973.

DeBary, Wm. Theodore, Wing-tsit Chan, and Burton Watson, eds. *Sources of Chinese Tradition*. Vol. 1. New York: Columbia University Press, 1960.

De Visser, Marinus W. *The Bodhisattva Akasagarbha (Kokuzo) in China and Japan*. Amsterdam: Verhandeligen Der Koninklijke Akademie Van Wetenschappen Te Amsterdam Afdeeling Letterkunde Niuuwe Reeks vol. 30, no. 1 (1931).

———. *The Bodhisattva Ti-Tsang (Jizo) in China and Japan*. Berlin: Osterheld, 1914.

Dolce, Lucia. "Between Duration and Eternity: Hermeneutics of the 'Ancient Buddha' of the Lotus Sutra in Chih-I and Nichiren." In Gene Reeves, ed., *A Buddhist Kaleidoscope: Essays on the Lotus Sutra*. Tokyo: Kosei, 2002.

Donner, Neal, and Daniel Stevenson. *The Great Calming and Contemplation: A Study and Annotated Translation of the First Chapter of Chih-i's Mo-ho chih-kuan*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 1993.

Dykstra, Yoshiko. *Miraculous Tales of the Lotus Sutra from Ancient Japan: The "Dainihonkoku Hokekyokenki" of Priest Chingen*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1984.

Ebrey, Patricia Buckley, and Peter N. Gregory, eds. *Religion and Society in T'ang and Sung China*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1993.

Einarsen, John, ed. *The Sacred Mountains of Asia*. Boston: Shambhala, 1995.

Gimello, Robert, and Peter Gregory, eds. *Studies in Ch'an and Hua-yen*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 1983.

Gomez, Luis O. "From the Extraordinary to the Ordinary: Images of the Bodhisattva in East Asia." In Donald Lopez Jr. and Steven Rockefeller, eds., *The Christ and the Bodhisattva*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1987.

Grapard, Allan. "Flying Mountains and Walkers of Emptiness: Sacred Space in Japanese Religions." *Kyoto Journal*, no. 25 (1993): 36–42.

———. "Nature and Culture in Japan." In Michael Tobias, ed., *Deep Ecology*. San Diego: Avant Books, 1985.

Gregory, Peter, trans., with commentary. *Inquiry into the Origin of Humanity: An Annotated Translation of Tsung-mi's* Yuan jen lun *with a Modern Commentary*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 1995.

———, ed. *Sudden and Gradual: Approaches to Enlightenment in Chinese Thought*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1987.

———. *Traditions of Meditation in Chinese Buddhism*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 1986.

———. *Tsung-mi and the Sinification of Buddhism*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 2002.

Gregory, Peter, and Daniel Getz Jr., eds. *Buddhism in the Sung*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 1999.

Groner, Paul. "The Lotus Sutra and Saicho's Interpretation of the Realization of Buddhahood with This Very Body." In George J. Tanabe Jr. and Willa Jane Tanabe, eds., *The Lotus Sutra in Japanese Culture*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1989.

———. *Saicho: The Establishment of the Japanese Tendai School*. Berkeley: Berkeley Buddhist Study Series, 1984.

———. "Shortening the Path: Early Tendai Interpretations of the Realization of Buddhahood with This Very Body." In Robert Buswell and Robert Gimello, eds., *Paths to Liberation: The Mārga and Its Transformation in Buddhist Thought*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1992.

Haar, B. J. ter. *The White Lotus Teachings in Chinese History*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1999.

Habito, Ruben. "Bodily Reading of the Lotus Sūtra: Understanding Nichiren's Buddhism." *Japanese Journal of Religious Studies* 26, nos. 3–4 (1999): 281–306.

———. *Originary Enlightenment: Tendai Hongaku Doctrine and Japanese Buddhism*. Tokyo: International Institute for Buddhist Studies, 1996.

Hakeda, Yoshito S., trans., with commentary. *The Awakening of Faith: Attributed to Aśvaghosha*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1967.

———. *Kūkai: Major Works*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1972.

Hirakawa Akira. *A History of Indian Buddhism: From Śākyamuni to Early Mahāyāna*. Trans. and ed. Paul Groner. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1990.

Hirota, Dennis, trans. *No Abode: The Record of Ippen*. Kyoto: Ryukoku University Translation Center, 1986.

Honda, Megumu, trans. *Annotated Translation of the Daśabhūmika Sūtra*. New Delhi: International Academy of Indian Culture, 1968.

Hori, Kyotsu, trans. and ed. *St. Nichiren's Kaimoku-shō: Open Your Eyes to the Lotus Teaching*. Tokyo: Nichiren Shu Overseas Propagation Promotion Association, 1987.

———, trans. and ed. *St. Nichiren's Kanjin Honzon-shō: A Treatise Revealing the Spiritual Contemplation and the Object of Worship for the First Time in the Fifth 500-Year Period after the Death of Śākyamuni Buddha*. Tokyo: Nichiren Shu Overseas Propagation Promotion Association, 1991.

Hubbard, Jamie, and Paul Swanson, eds. *Pruning the Bodhi Tree: The Storm over Critical Buddhism*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1997.

Hurvitz, Leon. *Chih-I (538–597): An Introduction to the Life and Ideas of a Chinese Monk*. Brussels: L'Institut Belge des Hautes Etudes Chinoises, 1962.

———, trans. *Scripture of the Lotus Blossom of the Fine Dharma*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1976.

Kasahara, Kazuo, ed. *A History of Japanese Religion*. Tokyo: Kosei, 2001.

Kashiwahara, Yusen, and Koyu Sonoda, eds. *Shapers of Japanese Buddhism*. Trans. Gaynor Sekimori. Tokyo: Kosei, 1994.

Katō, Bunnō, Yoshirō Tamura, and Kōjirō Miyasaka, trans. *The Threefold Lotus Sutra: Innumerable Meanings, The Lotus Flower of the Wonderful Law, and Meditation on the Bodhisattva Universal Virtue*. New York: Weatherhill, 1975.

Kawai, Hayao. *The Buddhist Priest Myoe: A Life of Dreams*. Trans. Mark Unno. Venice, CA: Lapis Press, 1992.

Kawamura, Leslie, ed. *The Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhism*. Waterloo, Ontario: Canadian Corporation for Studies in Religion, 1981.

Kern, H., trans. *The Saddharma-pundarika or the Lotus of the True Law*. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1909.

Kim, Young-Ho. *Tao-Sheng's Commentary on the Lotus Sutra: A Study and Translation*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1990.

King, Sallie B. *Buddha Nature*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1991.

Kitagawa, Joseph. *On Understanding Japanese Religion*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1987.

Kubo, Tsugunari, and Akira Yuyama, trans. *The Lotus Sutra*. Berkeley: Numata Center for Buddhist Translation and Research, 1993.

LaFleur, William R. *Awesome Nightfall: The Life, Times, and Poetry of Saigyō*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 2003.

———. *The Karma of Words: Buddhism and the Literary Arts in Medieval Japan*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1983.

———, trans. *Mirror for the Moon: A Selection of Poems by Saigyo*. New York: New Directions, 1977.

Lamotte, Étienne, trans. [from Chinese to French]. *The Teaching of Vimalakirti*. Trans. Sara Boin [from French]. New York: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1976.

Leighton, Taigen Dan. *Faces of Compassion: Classic Bodhisattva Archetypes and Their Modern Expression*. Revised ed. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 2003. (Originally published as *Bodhisattva Archetypes: Classic Buddhist Guides to Awakening and Their Modern Expression*. New York: Penguin/Arkana, 1998.)

Little, Stephen. *Visions of the Dharma: Japanese Buddhist Paintings and Prints in the Honolulu Academy of Arts*. Honolulu: Honolulu Academy of Arts, 1991.

Lopez, Donald, Jr., ed. *Buddhism in Practice*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1995.

Lopez, Donald, Jr., and Steven Rockefeller, eds. *The Christ and the Bodhisattva*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1987.

Luk, Charles. *The Secrets of Chinese Meditation: Self-Cultivation by Mind Control as Taught in the Ch'an, Mahayana and Taoist Schools in China*. New York: Samuel Weiser, 1964.

Matsunaga, Alicia. *The Buddhist Philosophy of Assimilation*. Tokyo: Charles Tuttle, 1969.

Matsunaga, Daigan, and Alicia Matsunaga. *Foundations of Japanese Buddhism*. 2 vols. Los Angeles: Buddhist Books International, 1976.

McCormick, Michael. *The Faith Practice and Teaching of Nichiren Buddhism*. Unpublished manuscript, 1999.

———. *Lotus Seeds: The Essence of Nichiren Shu Buddhism*. San Jose: Nichiren Buddhist Temple of San Jose, 2000.

———. *Lotus World: An Illustrated Guide to the Gohonzan*. San Jose: Nichiren Buddhist Temple of San Jose, 2005.

McMahan, David. *Empty Vision: Metaphor and Visionary Imagery in Mahāyāna Buddhism*. London: RoutledgeCurzon, 2002.

Mills, D. E. *A Collection of Tales from Uji: A Study and Translation of Uji Shui Monogatari*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press, 1970.

Mizuno, Kōgen. *Buddhist Sutras: Origin, Development, Transmission*. Tokyo: Kosei, 1982.

Montgomery, Daniel. *Fire in the Lotus: The Dynamic Buddhism of Nichiren*. London: Mandala, 1991.

Morrell, Robert. *Early Kamakura Buddhism: A Minority Report*. Berkeley: Asian Humanities Press, 1987.

———. *Sand and Pebbles (Shasekishu): The Tales of Muju Ichien, a Voice for Pluralism in Kamakura Buddhism*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1985.

Muller, Charles, trans. *The Sutra of Perfect Enlightenment*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1999.

Nagao, Gadjin. *Madhyamika and Yogacara*. Trans. Leslie Kawamura. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1989.

Nattier, Jan. "A Greater Awakening." *Tricycle* 15, no. 3 (spring 2006): 65–69.

———. "The Lotus Sutra: Good News for Whom?" Paper presented at Third International Lotus Sutra Conference, Tokyo, Risshō Kōseikai, 1997.

———. *Once upon a Future Time: Studies in a Buddhist Prophecy of Decline*. Berkeley: Asian Humanities Press, 1991.

Park, Sung Bae. *Buddhist Faith and Sudden Enlightenment*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1983.

Payne, Richard, ed. *Re-Visioning Kamakura Buddhism*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1998.

Payne, Richard, and Taigen Dan Leighton, eds. *Discourse and Ideology in Medieval Japanese Buddhism*. London: Routledge, 2006.

Penkower, Linda. "T'ien-t'ai During the T'ang Dynasty: Chan-jan and the Sinification of Buddhism." PhD diss., Columbia University, 1993.

Powers, John, trans. *Wisdom of Buddha: The Samdhinirmocana Sutra*. Berkeley: Dharma Publishing, 1995.

Price, A. F., and Wong Mou-Lam, trans. *The Diamond Sutra and The Sutra of Hui Neng*. Berkeley: Shambhala, 1969.

Pye, Michael. "The Length of Life of the Tathāgata." In Gene Reeves, ed., *A Buddhist Kaleidoscope: Essays on the Lotus Sutra*. Tokyo: Kosei, 2002.

Rambelli, Fabio. "Texts, Talismans, and Jewels: The *Reikiki* and the Performativity of Sacred Texts in Medieval Japan." In Richard Payne and Taigen Dan Leighton, eds., *Discourse and Ideology in Medieval Japanese Buddhism*. London: Routledge, 2006.

Rawlinson, Andrew. "Studies in the Lotus Sūtra." PhD diss., University of Lancaster, UK, 1972.

Reeves, Gene. "Bodhisattvas of the Earth." *Dharma World* 32 (March/April 2005): 9–13.

———, ed. *A Buddhist Kaleidoscope: Essays on the Lotus Sutra*. Tokyo: Kosei, 2002.

———. "Cosmology as World-Affirmation in the Lotus Sutra." Unpublished manuscript, 1999.

———. "The Parable of the Good Physician." *Dharma World* 32 (May/June 2005): 11–16.

———, convener. Unpublished papers and responses from the 1994 Theological Encounter with Buddhism Conference on the Lotus Sutra, Tokyo, Risshō Kōseikai, 1994. (Participants include David Chappell, Julia Ching, Jeffrey Hopkins, Gishin Tokiwa, Malcom David Eckel, Rita Gross, Taitetsu Unno.)

Sadakata, Akira. *Buddhist Cosmology: Philosophy and Origins*. Tokyo: Kōsei, 1997.

Sanford, James, William LaFleur, and Masatoshi Nagatomi, eds. *Flowing Traces: Buddhism in the Literary and Visual Arts of Japan*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1992.

Sangharakshita. *The Eternal Legacy: An Introduction to the Canonical Literature of Buddhism*. London: Tharpa, 1985.

Saunders, E. Dale. *Mudrā: A Study of Symbolic Gestures in Japanese Buddhist Sculpture*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1960.

Schopen, Gregory. *Bones, Stones, and Buddhist Monks: Collected Papers on the Archaeology, Epigraph, and Texts of Monastic Buddhism in India*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1997.

Senchakushū English Translation Project, including Morris Augustine, Tesshō Kondō, and Takatoshi Hirokawa, trans. and eds. *Hōnen's* Senchakushū: *Passages on the Selection of the Nembutsu in the Original Vow*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1998.

Sharf, Robert. *Coming to Terms with Chinese Buddhism: A Reading of the* Treasure Store Treatise. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 2002.

———. "On the Buddha-nature of Insentient Things: How to Think about a Ch'an Kung-an." Available at http://kr.buddhism.org/zen/koan/Robert_Sharf-e.htm.

Shioiri Ryodo. "The Meaning of the Formation and Structure of the Lotus Sutra." In George J. Tanabe Jr. and Willa Jane Tanabe, eds., *The Lotus Sutra in Japanese Culture*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1989.

Sponberg, Alan, and Helen Hardacre, eds. *Maitreya*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1986.

Stone, Jacqueline. *Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Medieval Japanese Buddhism*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1999.

———. "Placing Nichiren in the 'Big Picture': Some Ongoing Issues in Scholarship." *Japanese Journal of Religious Studies* 26, nos. 3–4 (1999): 383–421.

Strong, John S. *The Buddha: A Short Biography*. Oxford: Oneworld, 2001.

Suguro, Shinjo. *Introduction to the Lotus Sutra*. Trans. Nichiren Buddhist International Center. Fremont, CA: Jain Publishing, 1998.

Suzuki, D. T., trans. *The Lankavatara Sutra: A Mahayana Text*. London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1932.

Suzuki, Shunryū. *Lectures on the Lotus Sūtra*. 3 series, February 1968–November 1969. Unpublished collected transcripts, portions of first series published in *Windbell*, 1969, San Francisco Zen Center.

Swanson, Paul. *Foundations of T'ien-T'ai Philosophy*. Berkeley: Asian Humanities Press, 1989.

———, trans. *Gishin's "The Collected Teachings of the Tendai Lotus School."* Berkeley: Numata Center for Buddhist Translation and Research, 1995.

———, trans. *The Great Cessation-and-Contemplation*. Compact disc. Tokyo: Kosei, 2004. Available at www.kosei-shuppan.co.jp/english/.

Tamura Yoshiro. "The Ideas of the Lotus Sutra." In George J. Tanabe Jr. and Willa Jane Tanabe, eds., *The Lotus Sutra in Japanese Culture*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1989.

———. *The Lotus Sutra: Truth, Life, Practice*. Trans. Gene Reeves and Michio Shinozaki. Unpublished manuscript, 1999.

Tanabe, George J., Jr. *Myōe the Dreamkeeper: Fantasy and Knowledge in Early Kamakura Buddhism*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1992.

———, ed. *Religions of Japan in Practice*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1999.

Tanabe, George J., Jr., and Willa Jane Tanabe, eds. *The Lotus Sutra in Japanese Culture*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1989.

Teiser, Stephen F. *The Scripture on the Ten Kings and the Making of Purgatory in Medieval Chinese Buddhism*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1987.

Thurman, Robert A. F., trans. *The Holy Teachings of Vimalakirti: A Mahayana Scripture*. University Park: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1976.

Toda, Josei. *Lectures on the Sutra: Hoben and Juryo Chapters*. Tokyo: Nichiren Shoshu International, 1978.

Tyler, Royall. *Japanese Tales*. New York: Pantheon Books, 1987.

Ueda, Yoshifumi, and Dennis Hirota. *Shinran: An Introduction to His Thought*. Kyoto: Hongwanji International Center, 1989.

Unno, Mark. "The Body of Time and the Discourse of Precepts." In Richard Payne and Taigen Dan Leighton, eds., *Discourse and Ideology in Medieval Japanese Buddhism*. London: Routledge, 2006.

———. *Shingon Refractions: Myōe and the Mantra of Light*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 2004.

Verdu, Alfonso. *Dialectical Aspects in Buddhist Thought: Studies in Sino-Japanese Mahayana Idealism*. Lawrence: University of Kansas, Center for East Asian Studies, 1974.

Watson, Burton, trans. *The Lotus Sutra*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1993.

———, trans. *Saigyo: Poems of a Mountain Home*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1991.

———, trans. *The Vimalakirti Sutra*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1997.
Weidner, Marsha, ed. *Latter Days of the Law: Images of Chinese Buddhism, 850–1850*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press; in association with Spencer Museum of Art, University of Kansas, 1994.
Welch, Holmes. *The Practice of Chinese Buddhism: 1900–1950*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1967.
Williams, Paul. *Mahayana Buddhism: The Doctrinal Foundations*. London: Routledge, 1989.
Willis, Janice Dean. *On Knowing Reality*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1979.
Wu, Yi. *Chinese Philosophical Terms*. Lanham, MD: University Press of America, 1986.
Yamada, Patricia. "The Worship of Jizo." *Kyoto Journal*, no. 2 (spring 1987): 22–26.

DŌGEN AND GENERAL ZEN TEXTS AND STUDIES

Abe, Masao. *A Study of Dōgen: His Philosophy and Religion*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1992.
Abé, Ryūichi, and Peter Haskel, trans., with essays. *Great Fool: Zen Master Ryōkan. Poems, Letters, and Writings*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1996.
Aitken, Robert, trans., with commentary. *The Gateless Barrier: The Wu-men Kuan (Mumonkan)*. San Francisco: North Point Press, 1990.
Anderson, Reb. *Being Upright: Zen Meditation and the Bodhisattva Precepts*. Berkeley: Rodmell Press, 2001.
———. *Warm Smiles from Cold Mountains*. San Francisco: San Francisco Zen Center, 1995.
App, Urs, trans. and ed. *Master Yunmen: From the Record of the Chan Teacher "Gate of the Clouds."* New York: Kodansha International, 1994.
Bielefeldt, Carl. *Dōgen's Manuals of Zen Meditation*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988.
———, trans. "Mountains and Waters Sutra." *Dharma Eye: Soto Zen Journal*,no. 9 (October 2001): 10–17.
Blofeld, John, trans. *The Zen Teaching of Huang-po: On the Transmission of Mind*. New York: Grove Press, 1958.
Bodiford, William M. *Sōtō Zen in Medieval Japan*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 1993.
Buswell, Robert E., Jr. *The Zen Monastic Experience*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1992.
Chadwick, David. *Crooked Cucumber: The Life and Zen Teaching of Shunryu Suzuki*. New York: Broadway Books, 1999.
Chang Chung-Yuan, trans. *Original Teachings of Ch'an Buddhism: Selected from "Transmission of the Lamp."* New York: Vintage Books, 1971.
Chien, Cheng Bhikshu, trans. *Sun Face Buddha: The Teachings of Ma-tsu*. Berkeley: Asian Humanities Press, 1992.
Cleary, J. C., trans. *Swampland Flowers: The Letters and Lectures of Zen Master Ta Hui*. New York: Grove Press, 1977.

———, trans. and ed. *Zen Dawn: Early Zen Texts from Tun Huang*. Boston: Shambhala, 1986.

Cleary, Thomas, trans. *The Book of Serenity*. Hudson, NY: Lindisfarne Press, 1990.

———, trans. *The Five Houses of Zen*. Boston: Shambhala, 1997.

———, trans. *Minding Mind: A Course in Basic Meditation*. Boston: Shambhala, 1995.

———, trans. and ed. *The Original Face: An Anthology of Rinzai Zen*. New York: Grove Press, 1978.

———, trans. *Rational Zen: The Mind of Dōgen Zenji*. Boston: Shambhala, 1993.

———, trans. *Record of Things Heard: The "Shōbōgenzō Zuimonki," Talks of Zen Master Dōgen as Recorded by Zen Master Ejō*. Boulder, CO: Prajna Press, 1980.

———, trans. *Sayings and Doings of Pai-chang: Ch'an Master of Great Wisdom*. Los Angeles: Center Publications, 1978.

———, trans. *Secrets of the Blue Cliff Record: Zen Comments by Hakuin and Tenkei*. Boston: Shambhala, 2000.

———, trans. *Shōbōgenzō: Zen Essays by Dōgen*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1986.

———, trans. *The Sutra of Hui-neng: With Hui-neng's Commentary on the Diamond Sutra*. Boston: Shambhala, 1998.

———, ed. and trans. *Timeless Spring: A Soto Zen Anthology*. Tokyo: Weatherhill, 1980.

———, trans. and introduction. *Transmission of Light: Zen in the Art of Enlightenment by Zen Master Keizan*. San Francisco: North Point Press, 1990.

———, trans. and commentary. *Unlocking the Zen Koan: A New Translation of the Wumenguan*. Berkeley: North Atlantic Books, 1997. (Originally published as *No Barrier: Unlocking the Zen Koan. A New Translation of the Wumenguan*. New York: Bantam Books, 1993).

Cleary, Thomas, and J. C. Cleary, trans. *The Blue Cliff Record*. 3 vols.Boston: Shambhala, 1977.

———, trans. *Zen Letters: Teachings of Yuanwu*. Boston: Shambhala, 1994.

———, trans. *Zen Lore from the* Source Mirror, *compiled by Zen Master Yen-shou*. N.p.: Nanyang Books, 1979.

Collcutt, Martin. *Five Mountains: The Rinzai Zen Monastic Institution in Medieval Japan*. Cambridge, MA: Council on East Asian Studies, Harvard University Press, 1981.

Cook, Francis. *How to Raise an Ox: Zen Practice as Taught in Zen Master Dōgen's Shobogenzo*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 2002. (Originally published by Los Angeles: Center Publications, 1978).

———, trans. *The Record of Transmitting the Light: Zen Master Keizan's Denkoroku*. Los Angeles: Center Publications, 1991.

———, trans. *Sounds of Valley Streams: Enlightenment in Dōgen's Zen*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1989.

Dumoulin, Heinrich. *Zen Buddhism: A History*. 2 vols. Trans. James W. Heisig and Paul Knitter. New York: Macmillan, 1990.

Faure, Bernard. "The Daruma-shū, Dōgen, and Sōtō Zen." *Monumenta Nipponica* 42, no. 1 (spring 1987): 25–55.

———. *The Rhetoric of Immediacy: A Cultural Critique of Ch'an/Zen Buddhism*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1991.

———. *Visions of Power: Imagining Medieval Japanese Buddhism*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1996.

Ferguson, Andy. *Zen's Chinese Heritage: The Masters and Their Teachings*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 2000.

Foster, Nelson, and Jack Shoemaker, eds. *The Roaring Stream: A New Zen Reader*. Hopewell, NJ: Ecco Press, 1996.

Green, James, trans. *The Recorded Sayings of Zen Master Joshu*. Boston: Shambhala, 1998.

Grosnick, William. "The Zen Master Dōgen's Understanding of the Buddha-Nature in Light of the Historical Development of the Buddha-Nature Concept in India, China, and Japan." PhD diss., University of Wisconsin at Madison, 1979.

Heine, Steven. *A Blade of Grass: Japanese Poetry and Aesthetics in Dōgen Zen*. New York: Peter Lang, 1989.

———. *Did Dōgen Go to China? What He Wrote and When He Wrote It*. New York: Oxford University Press, 2006.

———. "The Dōgen Canon: Dōgen's Pre-*Shōbōgenzō* Writings and the Question of Change in his Later Works." *Japanese Journal of Religious Studies* 24, nos. 1–2 (spring 1997): 39–85.

———. *Dōgen and the Koan Tradition: A Tale of Two "Shōbōgenzō" Texts*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1994.

———. *Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1985.

———. *Opening a Mountain: Kōans of the Zen Masters*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2002.

———. *Shifting Shape, Shaping Text: Philosophy and Folklore in the Fox Koan*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1999.

———. *The Zen Poetry of Dōgen: Verses from the Mountain of Eternal Peace*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1997.

Heine, Steven, and Dale Wright, eds. *The Koan: Texts and Contexts in Zen Buddhism*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2000.

———. *The Zen Canon: Understanding the Classic Texts*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2004.

———. *Zen Classics: Formative Texts in the History of Zen Buddhism*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2006.

Ives, Christopher. "Not Buying In to Words and Letters: Zen, Ideology, and Prophetic Critique." Paper presented at the American Academy of Religion conference for the panel "The Contemplation of Social Activism: Prospects and Resources for Zen Social Ethics," Philadelphia, November 2005. Forthcoming in *Journal of Buddhist Ethics* 13 (2006).

———. "What's Compassion Got to Do with It?" *Journal of Buddhist Ethics* 12 (2005). Available at http://jbe.gold.ac.uk/12/ives0529.html.

Kasulis, Thomas P. *Zen Action/Zen Person*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1981.

———. "Zen as a Social Ethics of Responsiveness." Paper presented at the American Academy of Religion conference for the panel "The Contemplation of Social Activism: Prospects and Resources for Zen Social Ethics," Philadelphia, November 2005. Forthcoming in *Journal of Buddhist Ethics* 13 (2006).

Katagiri, Dainin. *Returning to Silence: Zen Practice in Daily Life*. Boston: Shambhala, 1988.

Kim, Hee-Jin. *Eihei Dōgen: Mystical Realist*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 2004. (Originally published as *Dōgen Kigen: Mystical Realist*. Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1975).

———, trans. *Flowers of Emptiness: Selections from Dōgen's "Shōbōgenzō."* Lewiston, NY: Edwin Mellen Press, 1985.

Kodera, Takashi James. *Dōgen's Formative Years in China: An Historical Study and Annotated Translation of the* Hōkyō-ki. Boulder, CO: Prajña Press, 1980.

LaFleur, William R., ed. *Dōgen Studies*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 1985.

Leighton, Taigen Dan. "Being Time through Deep Time." *Kyoto Journal*, no. 20 (1992): 5–12.

———. "Dōgen's Appropriation of *Lotus Sutra* Ground and Space." *Japanese Journal of Religious Studies* 32, no. 1 (2005): 85–105.

———. "Dōgen's Cosmology of Space and the Practice of Self-Fulfillment." *Pacific World* 3rd series, no. 6 (2004): 27–43.

———. "The *Lotus Sutra* as a Source for Dōgen's Discourse Style." In Richard Payne and Taigen Dan Leighton, eds., *Discourse and Ideology in Medieval Japanese Buddhism*. London: Routledge, 2006.

Leighton, Taigen Dan, and Shohaku Okumura, trans. *Dōgen's Extensive Record: A Translation of Eihei Kōroku*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 2004.

———. *Dōgen's Pure Standards for the Zen Community: A Translation of Eihei Shingi*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 1996.

Leighton, Taigen Dan, with Yi Wu, trans. *Cultivating the Empty Field: The Silent Illumination of Zen Master Hongzhi*. Boston: Tuttle, 2000. (Originally published by New York: North Point Press, 1991).

Levering, Miriam. "The Dragon Girl and the Abbess of Mo-shan: Gender and Status in the Ch'an Buddhist Tradition." *Journal of the International Association of Buddhist Studies* 5, no. 1 (1982): 19–35.

Luk, Charles, trans. *Empty Cloud: The Autobiography of the Chinese Zen Master Xu Yun*. Ed. and revised by Richard Hunn. Longmead, UK: Element Books, 1988.

Mitchell, James. *Soto Zen Ancestors in China: The Recorded Teachings of Shitou Xiqian, Yaoshan Weiyan, and Yunyan Tansheng*. San Francisco: Ithuriel's Spear, 2005.

Miura, Isshū, and Ruth Fuller Sasaki. *Zen Dust: the History of the Koan and Koan Study in Rinzai (Lin-chi) Zen*. New York: Harcourt, Brace, and World, 1966. (Later republished, although without the voluminously comprehensive and invaluable footnotes, as *The Zen Koan: Its History and Use in Rinzai Zen*.)

Nishijima, Gudō, trans. *Master Dōgen's Shinji Shōbōgenzō: 301 Koan Stories*. Woods Hole, MA: Windbell Publications, 2003.

Nishijima, Gudō Wafu, and Chōdō Cross, trans. *Master Dōgen's Shobogenzo*. 4 vols. Woods Hole, MA: Windbell Publications, 1994–1999.

Ogata, Sohaku, trans. *The Transmission of the Lamp: Early Masters. Compiled by Tao Yuan, a Ch'an Monk of the Sung Dynasty*. Durango, CO: Longwood Academic, 1990.

Okumura, Shohaku, trans. and ed. *Dōgen Zen*. Kyoto: Kyoto Soto Zen Center, 1988.

———, ed. *Dōgen Zen and Its Relevance for Our Time*. San Francisco: Sōtō Zen Buddhism International Center, 2003.

———, trans. *Shikantaza: An Introduction to Zazen*. Kyoto: Kyoto Soto Zen Center, 1985.

———, trans. *"Shōbōgenzō Zuimonki": Sayings of Eihei Dōgen Zenji, Recorded by Kōun Ejō*. Kyoto: Kyoto Soto Zen Center, 1987.

Okumura, Shohaku, and Taigen Daniel Leighton, trans. *The Wholehearted Way: A Translation of Eihei Dōgen's "Bendowa" with Commentary by Kōsho Uchiyama Roshi*. Boston: Charles Tuttle, 1997.

Okumura, Shohaku, and Thomas Wright, trans. *Opening the Hand of Thought*. New York: Viking Penguin, 1994.

Park, Jin. "Wisdom, Compassion, and Zen Social Ethics: The Case of Chinul, Sŏngchŏl, and Minjung Buddhism in Korea." Paper presented at the American Academy of Religion conference for the panel "The Contemplation of Social Activism: Prospects and Resources for Zen Social Ethics," Philadelphia, November 2005. Forthcoming in *Journal of Buddhist Ethics* 13 (2006).

Powell, William F., trans. *The Record of Tung-shan*. Honolulu: Kuroda Institute, University of Hawai'i Press, 1986.

Riggs, David. "The Rekindling of a Tradition: Menzan Zuihō and the Reform of Japanese Sōtō Zen in the Tokugawa Era." PhD diss., University of California at Los Angeles, 2002.

Sanford, James H. *Zen Man-Ikkyu*. Chico, CA: Scholars Press, 1981.

Sasaki, Ruth Fuller, Yoshitaka Iriya, and Dana R. Fraser, trans. *The Recorded Sayings of Layman P'ang: A Ninth-Century Zen Classic*. New York: Weatherhill, 1971.

Sato, Shunmyo. *Two Moons: Short Zen Stories*. Trans. Rev. and Mrs. Shugen Komagata and Daniel Itto Bailey. Honolulu: Hawai'i Hochi, 1981.

Schloegl, Irmgard, trans. *The Zen Teaching of Rinzai*. Berkeley: Shambhala, 1976.

Shaw, R. D. M. *The Embossed Tea Kettle: Orate Gama and Other Works of Hakuin Zenji*. London: George Allen & Unwin, 1963.

Sheng-Yen, Master, trans. and ed. *The Poetry of Enlightenment: Poems by Ancient Ch'an Masters*. Elmhurst, NY: Dharma Drum Publications, 1987.

Shibayama, Zenkei. *The Gateless Barrier: Zen Comments on the Mumonkan*. Boston: Shambhala, 2000.

Soto Zen Text Project. *Soto School Scriptures for Daily Services and Practice*. Tokyo: SotoshuShumucho, 2001.

Stambaugh, Joan. *Impermanence Is Buddha-Nature: Dōgen's Understanding of Temporality*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1990.

Stevens, John. *One Robe, One Bowl: The Zen Poetry of Ryōkan*. New York: Weatherhill, 1977.

———. *Three Zen Masters: Ikkyū, Hakuin, Ryōkan*. Tokyo: Kodansha International, 1993.

Suzuki, Shunryū. *Branching Streams Flow in the Darkness: Zen Talks on the Sandokai*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1999.

———. "Lectures on the Lotus Sutra." Unpublished manuscript, San Francisco Zen Center, 1968–1969.

———. *Not Always So: Practicing the True Spirit of Zen*. New York: HarperCollins, 2002.

———. *Zen Mind, Beginner's Mind*. New York: Weatherhill, 1970.

Tanahashi, Kazuaki, ed. and trans. *Beyond Thinking: Meditation Guide by Zen Master Dogen*. Boston: Shambhala, 2004.

———, ed. and trans. *Enlightenment Unfolds: Life and Work of Zen Master Dogen*. Boston: Shambhala, 1998.

———, ed. and trans. *Moon in a Dewdrop: Writings of Zen Master Dōgen*. New York: North Point Press, 1985.

Tanahashi, Kazuaki, and John Daido Loori, trans. *The True Dharma Eye: Zen Master Dōgen's Three Hundred Kōans*. With commentary and verse by John Daido Loori. Boston: Shambhala, 2005.

Tanahashi, Kazuaki, and Michael Wenger, trans. "Dharma Blossoms Turn Dharma Blossoms." Ed. Kazuaki Tanahashi and Peter Levitt. Unpublished manuscript, San Francisco Zen Center, 2005.

Victoria, Brian. *Zen at War*. New York: Weatherhill, 1997.

Waddell, Norman, trans. "Dogen's Hokyo-ki, Part 1." *Eastern Buddhist* 10, no. 2 (1977): 102–139.

———, trans. "Dogen's Hokyo-ki, Part 2." *Eastern Buddhist* 11, no. 1 (1978): 66–83.

———. *The Essential Writings of Zen Master Hakuin*. Boston: Shambhala, 1994.

———. *Wild Ivy: The Spiritual Autobiography of Zen Master Hakuin*. Boston: Shambhala, 1999.

Waddell, Norman, and Masao Abe, trans. *The Heart of Dōgen's Shōbōgenzō*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 2002.

Watson, Burton, trans. *Ryokan: Zen Monk-Poet of Japan*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1977.

———. *The Zen Teachings of Master Lin-Chi*. Boston: Shambhala, 1993.

Wright, Dale. "*Satori* and the Moral Dimension of Enlightenment." Paper presented at the American Academy of Religion conference for the panel "The Contemplation of Social Activism: Prospects and Resources for Zen Social Ethics," Philadelphia, November 2005. Forthcoming in *Journal of Buddhist Ethics* 13 (2006).

Wright, Thomas, trans. *Refining Your Life: From Zen Kitchen to Enlightenment, by Zen Master Dōgen and Kosho Uchiyama*. New York: Weatherhill, 1983.

Wu, John C. H. *The Golden Age of Zen*. Taipei, Taiwan: United Publishing Center, 1975.

Wu, Yi. *The Mind of Chinese Ch'an (Zen): The Ch'an School Masters and Their Kung-ans*. San Francisco: Great Learning Publishing, 1989.

Yamada, Kōun, trans. and commentary. *Gateless Gate*. Los Angeles: Center Publications, 1979.

Yampolsky, Philip B., ed. and trans. *The Platform Sutra of the Sixth Patriarch*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1967.

———, trans. *The Zen Master Hakuin: Selected Writings*. New York: Columbia University Press, 1971.

Yifa. *The Origins of Buddhist Monastic Codes in China: An Annotated Translation and Study of the Chanyuan Qinggui*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 2002.

Yokoi, Yūhō, with Daizen Victoria. *Zen Master Dōgen: An Introduction with Selected Writings*. New York: Weatherhill, 1976.

Yuasa, Nobuyuki. *The Zen Poems of Ryōkan*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1981.

Yusa, Michiko. "The *Lotus Sutra* and Dōgen's Zen Hermeneutics." Paper presented at the Eighth International Lotus Sutra Conference, Tokyo, Risshō Kōseikai, 2002.

RELIGIOUS STUDIES METHODOLOGY AND HERMENEUTICS

Abram, David. *The Spell of the Sensuous: Perception and Language in a More-Than-Human World*. New York: Vintage Books, 1996.

Bultman, Rudolf. *Faith and Understanding*. Ed. Robert Funk. Trans. Louise Pettibone Smith. New York: Harper & Row, 1969.

———. "Is Exegesis without Presuppositions Possible?" In Kurt Mueller-Vollmer, ed., *The Hermeneutics Reader: Texts of the German Tradition from the Enlightenment to the Present*. New York: Continuum, 1985.

Buswell, Robert. "Ch'an Hermeneutics: A Korean View." In Donald Lopez, ed., *Buddhist Hermeneutics*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1988.

Gadamer, Hans-Georg. *Truth and Method*. Trans. Garret Barden and William Doerpel. New York: Seabury Press, 1975.

Gregory, Peter. "Chinese Buddhist Hermeneutics: The Case of Hua-yen." *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 51, no. 2 (1983): 231–249.

———. "What Happened to the 'Perfect Teaching'? Another Look at Hua-yen Buddhist Hermeneutics." In Donald Lopez, ed., *Buddhist Hermeneutics*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1988.

Holub, Robert. "Hermeneutics: Twentieth Century." In Mircea Eliade, ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, vol. 6. New York: Macmillan, 1987.

Howard, Roy. *Three Faces of Hermeneutics: An Introduction to Current Theories of Understanding*. Berkeley: University of California Press, 1982.

Hyde, Lewis. *Trickster Makes This World: Mischief, Myth, and Art*. New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1998.

Kasulis, Thomas. "Truth Words: The Basis of Kūkai's Theory of Interpretation." In Donald Lopez, ed., *Buddhist Hermeneutics*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1988.

Lamotte, Étienne. "The Assessment of Textual Interpretation in Buddhism." In Donald Lopez, ed., *Buddhist Hermeneutics*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1988.

Lopez, Donald, ed. *Buddhist Hermeneutics*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1988.

Madison, G. B. "Hermeneutics: Gadamer and Ricoeur." In *The Routledge History of Philosophy*, vol. 8: *Twentieth-Century Continental Philosophy*. Ed. Richard Kearney. London: Routledge, 1994.

Meade, Michael. *Men and the Water of Life: Initiation and the Tempering of Men*. San Francisco: HarperSanFrancisco, 1993.

Mueller-Vollmer, Kurt, ed. *The Hermeneutics Reader: Texts of the German Tradition from the Enlightenment to the Present*. New York: Continuum, 1985.

Palmer, Richard. *Hermeneutics: Interpretation Theory in Schleiermacher, Dilthey, Heidegger, and Gadamer*. Evanston, IL: Northwestern University Press, 1969.

Pollack, David. *The Fracture of Meaning: Japan's Synthesis of China from the Eighth through the Eighteenth Centuries*. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press, 1986.

Pye, Michael, and Robert Morgan, eds. *The Cardinal Meaning: Essays in Comparative Hermeneutics: Buddhism and Christianity*. The Hague: Mouton, 1973.

Rajan, Tilottama. "Hermeneutics: Nineteenth Century." In Mircea Eliade, ed., *The Encyclopedia of Religion*, vol. 6. New York: Macmillan, 1987.

Ricoeur, Paul. *Figuring the Sacred: Religion, Narrative, and Imagination*. Ed. Mark Wallace. Trans. David Pellauer. Minneapolis: Fortress Press, 1995.

———. *Hermeneutics and the Human Sciences*. Ed. and trans. John Thompson. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press, 1981.

Smith, Jonathan Z. *Imagining Religion: From Babylon to Jonestown*. Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1982.

Thurman, Robert. "Buddhist Hermeneutics." *Journal of the American Academy of Religion* 46, no. 1 (January 1978): 19–39.

———. "Vajra Hermeneutics." In Donald Lopez, ed., *Buddhist Hermeneutics*. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press, 1988.

TIME AND SPACE COSMOLOGY/EARTH SACRALITY

Badiner, Allan Hunt, ed. *Dharma Gaia: A Harvest of Essays in Buddhism and Ecology*. Berkeley: Parallax Press, 1990.

Bateson, Gregory. *Mind and Nature: A Necessary Unity*. New York: E. P. Dutton, 1979.

Capra, Fritjof. *The Tao of Physics: An Exploration of the Parallels between Modern Physics and Eastern Mysticism*. Berkeley: Shambhala, 1975.

Davies, Paul. *About Time: Einstein's Unfinished Revolution*. New York: Touchstone, 1995.

Dillard, Annie. *For the Time Being*. New York: Vintage Books, 1999.

Dylan, Bob. *Lyrics, 1962–2001*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 2004.

Eliot, T. S. *Four Quartets*. New York: Harcourt, 1943.

Furtwangler, Albert. *Answering Chief Seattle*. Seattle: University of Washington Press, 1997.

Greene, Brian. *The Elegant Universe: Superstrings, Hidden Dimensions, and the Quest for the Ultimate Theory*. New York: Vintage Books, 2003.

———. *The Fabric of the Cosmos: Space, Time, and the Texture of Reality*. New York: Vintage Books, 2004.

Holt, Jim. "Time Bandits: What Were Einstein and Gödel Talking About?" *New Yorker*, February 28, 2005, 80–85.

Jones, Ken. *Beyond Optimism: A Buddhist Political Ecology*. Oxford: Jon Carpenter, 1993.

Kaza, Stephanie. *The Attentive Heart: Conversations with Trees*. New York: Ballantine Books, 1993.

Leighton, Taigen Dan. "Now Is the Past of the Future." *Shambhala Sun* 5, no. 1 (September 1996): 42–49.

Lightman, Alan. *Einstein's Dreams*. New York: Warner Books, 1993.

Lonergan, Anne, and Caroline Edwards, eds. *Thomas Berry and the New Cosmology*. Mystic, CT: Twenty-Third Publications, 1987.

Loy, David. *A Buddhist History of the West: Studies in Lack*. Albany: State University of New York Press, 2002.

———. *The Great Awakening: A Buddhist Social Theory*. Boston: Wisdom Publications, 2003.

Macy, Joanna. *Widening Circles: A Memoir*. Gabriola Island, Canada: New Society Publishers, 2000.

———. *World as Lover, World as Self*. Berkeley: Parallax Press, 1991.

Odin, Steve. "The Japanese Concept of Nature and Aldo Leopold." In Mary Evelyn Tucker and Duncan Ryūken Williams, eds., *Buddhism and Ecology: The Interconnection of Dharma and Deeds*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1997.

Parkes, Graham. "Voices of Mountains, Trees, and Rivers: Kūkai, Dōgen, and a Deeper Ecology." In Mary Evelyn Tucker and Duncan Ryūken Williams, eds., *Buddhism and Ecology: The Interconnection of Dharma and Deeds*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1997.

Ricard, Matthieu, and Trinh Xuan Thuan. *The Quantum and Lotus*. New York: Three Rivers Press, 2001.

Sacks, Oliver. "Speed: Aberrations of Time and Movement." *New Yorker*, August 23, 2004, 60–69.

Smolin, Lee. "Atoms of Space and Time." *Scientific American* (January 2004): 66–75.

Snyder, Gary. *Earth House Hold: Technical Notes and Queries to Fellow Dharma Revolutionaries*. New York: New Directions, 1957.

———. *Mountains and Rivers without End*. Washington, DC: Counterpoint, 1996.

———. "Mountains Hidden in Mountains: Dōgen-zenji and the Mind of Ecology." In Shohaku Okumura, ed., *Dōgen Zen and Its Relevance for Our Time*. San Francisco: Sōtō Zen Buddhism International Center, 2003.

———. *The Practice of the Wild*. New York: North Point Press, 1990.

———. *The Real Work: Interviews and Talks, 1964–1979*. New York: New Directions, 1980.

Susskind, Leonard. *The Cosmic Landscape: String Theory and the Illusion of Intelligent Design*. New York: Little, Brown, 2006.

Tobias, Michael, ed. *Deep Ecology*. San Diego: Avant Books, 1985.

Tucker, Mary Evelyn, and Duncan Ryūken Williams, eds. *Buddhism and Ecology: The Interconnection of Dharma and Deeds*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press, 1997.

Yourgrau, Palle. *A World without Time: The Forgotten Legacy of Godel and Einstein*. Philadelphia: Perseus Books, 2004.

Index

Page numbers followed by *(2)*, as in 60*(2)*, indicate two separate references. Page numbers followed by *q*, as in 28*q*, indicate quotations.

Abé, Ryūichi: on Ryōkan, 60*q*
Abhidharma teachings: on space, 102
absolute: negation of the exaltation of, 32
absolute manifestation, 22
active interpretation (of texts), 20–21
activities (deeds)
  and practice, 85
  and wisdom, 124*q*
"Actualizing the Fundamental Point" (Dōgen), 33
aesthetics: *yūgen*, 49, 107
Ākāśagarbha Bodhisattva, 100–101
Akiba, Gengo: on Tassajara vs. Eiheiji, 138*n*96
Amaterasu deity, 52
Amida Buddha: name-chanting (nenbutsu) practice, 51, 53*(2)*
ancestor veneration in Chan and Zen Buddhism, 111
"assembly in the sky," 77
assembly of the Buddha
  amazement at the underground bodhisattvas, 5, 80–81
  on Vulture Peak, 57–58, 85
attaining buddhahood in this very body and mind, 81
attainment of suchness, 71–72
Avalokiteśvara Bodhisattva
  chant on, 65
  sesame cakes parable, 38–40
Avataṃsaka Sūtra, 9, 17
  ten ages, 108
  ten times, 107–109
  visual imagery in, 31
awakening (enlightenment/realization/liberation/buddhahood)
  attaining in this very body and mind, 81
  bodhisattva vow to awaken all beings, 126
  vs. delusion, 68
  dream state as the locus/arena of, 33, 34

awakening (*continued*)
experiences of (*see* awakening experiences)
fostering, 125, 126
ground of, 16, 17, 65
Lotus Sutra as an embodiment of, 29
not waiting for, 84, 86
original (*see* original enlightenment teaching/theory)
as physical as much as mental, 18
potential of all beings for, 83, 106
practice as, 62, 84–85, 91, 114
as a process, 45, 84, 115
rapid awakening of the Naga princess, 7–8
rapid awakening practice, 7, 8
release from delusion, 69
as space, 105–106
of space, 72
space as, 10, 101–102
study and, 69
and time, 116
turning the Dharma flower, 68–69, 74–75, 114–115
the world of particulars (phenomena) as the agent/arena/locus/functioning of, 4, 10, 34, 40, 46, 57
See also reality; suchness
awakening experiences
Dongshan, 9
Gikai, 72, 104
Hakuin, 59–60
Zhaozhou, 102–103
Zhizang, 73
"Awakening to the Bodhi-Mind" (Dōgen), 90, 126
"The Awesome Presence [or Dignified Manner] of Active Buddhas" (Dōgen), 83–84, 104, 106

Badiner, Allan Hunt: *Dharma Gaia*, 121
beings (things)
all as buddha nature: nonsentient things, 8–9; sentient beings, 30
all as sutras, 92*q*
bodhisattva vow to awaken all, 126
expounding of the Dharma by all, 92*q*, 124–125
potential of all for awakening, 83, 106
theory of beings without buddha nature, 42
as time, 113
See also particulars (phenomena)
"Being Time" (Dōgen), 82, 108, 112–114
being-time (time-being) (primordial/buddha time), 82*(2)*, 108, 112–114, 115, 127
flowing of time/time-being, 120, 147*n*80
symbol of, 84
Blue Cliff Record, 63
bodhicitta, 90
Bodhidharma, 17–18*q*
bodhisattva practice, 6–7, 54
methods, 124
bodhisattvas
Avalokiteśvara, 38–40, 65
emerging (*see* bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story)
Jizō (Kṣitigarbha), 99–101
Kokuzō (Ākāśagarbha), 100–101
Maitreya, 5, 57, 85–86, 109–110
Mañjuśri, 57
meaning of term, vi
Never-Despising Anyone (Sadāparibhūta), 61
Samantabhadra (Fugen), 57
Superior Conduct, 54
underground (*see* underground bodhisattvas)
visitors from a distant world system, 4–5
vow to awaken all beings, 126
See also buddhas
bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story (*Lotus Sutra*), v, vii*(2)*, 4–6
the Buddha's call for protectors of the sutra, 4–5, 42
clay soldiers story vs., v–vii
Dōgen's citations of, 67, 93
Dōgen's interpretations of, 67–94

East Asian interpretations of, 41–65
as an encouragement for practice, 91–92*(2)*
importance for Dōgen, 92–94
manifestation of the sacred in, 22–23
position in the sutra, 6–7, 81
purpose, 101*q*
visions in (*see* visions of space and time in the emerging bodhisattvas story)
Zhanran on, 47
"The Bodhisattva's Four Methods of Guidance" (Dōgen), 124
bodhisattva vow to awaken all beings, 126
body of the Buddha, 89
Book of Serenity: sesame cakes kōans (Yunmen), 39
"the bottom of a bucket broken out," 36
Broken Wooden Ladle Buddha, 35, 36
Buddha (Śākyamuni)
body ("whole body"), 89
call for protectors of the *Lotus Sutra*, 4–5, 42
death (*see* parinirvāṇa of the Buddha)
desire to meet, 90–91
as the Dharmakāya, 44–45, 56, 63–64, 65
disciples (*see* disciples of the Buddha)
dried turd parable, 37–38
expounding of the Dharma, 27*q*, 62
as father, 88*q*
life span (*see* life span of the Buddha)
life story as skillful means, 5–6, 34, 61–62
of the *Lotus Sutra* (*see* original Buddha)
and Maitreya, 5, 85–86
ongoing practice, 84, 89–90, 115–116
ontological status, 8, 55–56
original (*see* original Buddha)
original enlightenment teaching/theory about, 44–45, 46, 48, 56
passing away (*see* parinirvāṇa of the Buddha)
presence, 83–87
recompense body, 45–46
as the Sambhogakāya, 63–64, 65
soteriological function/activity, 8, 55
on space, 10–11
three bodies theory, 45–46, 48, 56
time of life/living, 82
in Tuṣita Heaven, 85, 86
on Vulture Peak, 67
"What is Buddha?" 132*n*28
yearning for, 51–52, 65, 87, 88, 89
"Buddha Ancestors" (Dōgen), 111
"buddha and buddha," 67–68
buddha fields, 71
"buddha going beyond buddha," 84
Buddha Ground, 44
buddhahood. *See* awakening
buddha land, 71, 103–104
See also Lotus Land
buddha mudra, 10
buddha nature
all sentient beings as, 30
Dōgen on, 9, 30
of/as in the ground (land), vii, 47
Mahāparinirvāṇa Sūtra on, 9, 30, 42, 47
of nonsentient things, 8–9
obstructions to, 17, 77
of space, 87
theory of beings without, 42
Zhanran on, 8, 46–47
See also Tathāgata garbha
"Buddha Nature" (Dōgen), 9, 30
buddhas
all as disciples of Śākyamuni, 83, 115
all as emanations of/identified with the original Buddha, 55, 88
Amida Buddha name-chanting (nenbutsu) practice, 51, 53*(2)*
Broken Wooden Ladle Buddha, 35, 36
"buddha going beyond buddha," 84
cause of appearance in the world, 15, 28, 33, 67, 87
developing buddhas, 83
epithets for a buddha, 35
"family style," 126
flowers-in-space vehicle, 76–79
form, 83
as free from obstructions, 86
Healing Buddha attendants, 100

buddhas (*continued*)
land of, 71, 103–104
ongoing practice, 84, 89–90, 115–116
Prabhūtaratna Buddha, 23, 74, 105–106
practice place, 86, 103–104
presence, 83–87
Śākyamuni (*see* Buddha)
transformation bodies parable, 35–36
in Tuṣita Heaven, 85–86
See also bodhisattvas
buddha time. *See* being-time
buddha way, 83
buddha womb/embryo. *See* Tathāgata garbha
buddha-work, 72–73
Buddhism
and ecology, 121–123
Esoteric Buddhism, 9 (*see also* Shingon school; Tendai school; Tiantai school)
the *Lotus Sutra* in Buddhist history, 81
Mahāyāna (*see* Mahāyāna Buddhism)
purpose, 15
and social ethics, 123–126
and string theory, 118–121
See also Chan Buddhism; Nichiren Buddhism; practice; Zen Buddhism
Buddhism and Ecology (Tucker and Williams), 121
Buddhist Hermeneutics (Lopez), 13
Buddhist hermeneutics (theories), 13–19
enactment practice (performance), 9, 17–19
Five Ranks philosophy/theories, 9, 16
Lotus Sutra requirement, 64
Tathāgata garbha, 15–17
three bodies of the Buddha, 45–46, 48, 56
triple world, 77, 108, 141*n*39
upāya/*hōben* (*see* skillful means)
Vajrayāna hermeneutics, 18
See also hermeneutics; Huayan (Kegon) teachings; original Buddha; original enlightenment teaching/theory
Buddhist teaching(s)
direct teaching vs. study, 68
"family style" of all buddhas, 126
as flowers in space, 76–79
interpretative theories (*see* Buddhist hermeneutics)
mikkyō teachings, 9
"origin teaching" (fundamental teaching), 6
of suchness, 26
"trace teaching," 6
truth as communicated by, 18
See also Dharma; *and under particular teachers*
burning house parable, 15

call for protectors of the *Lotus Sutra* (by the Buddha), 4–5, 42
Caodong school
Five Ranks philosophy (theories), 9, 16
founder, 9
See also Sōto school; *and under* Chan masters
Capra, Fritjof: *The Tao of Physics*, 118
cause section (*Lotus Sutra*), 6–7, 44
Chan Buddhism: ancestor veneration, 111. *See also* Caodong school; Chan masters; practice; Zen Buddhism
Chan masters
Dahui, 14
Deshan Xuanjian, 39
Dongshan Liangjie, 9
a few dedicated to the *Lotus Sutra*, 11, 48–49
Hongzhi, 103*q*
Huineng, 68, 84–85, 87
Linji, 14, 39, 59
Nanquan, 102–103, 110*q*
rejection of Mahāyāna sutras, 49, 59
Shigong, 73
Shitou Xiqian, 63, 111–112
Tiantong Rujing, 11, 85
Xuefeng Yicun, 86*q*
Zhaozhou, 102–103
Zhizang, 73
See also Zen masters
chanting of the name of the *Lotus Sutra*, 54, 58, 65

chants from the *Lotus Sutra*, 65, 138*n*96
Chanyuan Qinggui (Dōgen), 98
Chizang, 8
Christ: as absolute manifestation, 22
clay soldiers emerging from the ground story, v–vii
compassion: fostering, 125
creative reading, 20, 34. *See also* wordplay

Dahui: Dōgen's criticisms of, 14
daimoku. *See* "Namu Myō-hō-ren-ge-kyō"
Dajian Huineng. *See* Huineng
dancing nenbutsu practice, 53
Daosheng, 6, 41–42
  commentary on the *Lotus Sutra*, 42–44
  view of the earth/world, 42–43, 65
Daruma-shū, 14
Daśabhūmika Sūtra, 80
death of the Buddha. *See* parinirvāṇa of the Buddha
decorum as the Dharma, 19
"Deep Time" (Macy), 123
delusion
  causes of (*see* obstructions)
  realization vs., 68
  release from, 69*q*
denying time, 107*q*
Deshan Xuanjian, 39
desire to meet the Buddha, 90–91
developing buddhas: all beings as, 83
devotional traditions: faith in, 7. *See also* Nichiren Buddhism; Pure Land schools
Dharma
  expounding of: by all things/beings, 92*q*, 124–125; by the Buddha, 27*q*, 62
  proclamation of nonexplicit Dharma (Dōgen), 19, 24–27, 30
  purpose, 96
  See also Buddhist teaching(s); reality; truth
Dharma body. *See* Dharmakāya Buddha
dharmadhātu. *See* Fourfold Dharmadhātu
Dharma flower
  celebration of, 81
  springing out of, 70, 74, 80–81, 105
  turning, 68–69, 74–75, 114–115
  See also flowers in space
Dharma Flower Sutra. *See Lotus Sutra*
"The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower" (Dōgen), 68, 74*q*, 74–75*q*, 79–80, 81, 82, 101, 103, 104–105, 105–106, 114–115
Dharma Gaia (Badiner), 121
Dharma hall discourses (jōdō) (sermons), 13, 132*n*26
  Dōgen's Nirvāṇa Day discourses, 87–89
  See also specific topics addressed
Dharmakāya Buddha (Dharma body): as seen in the *Lotus Sutra*, 44–45, 56, 63–64, 65
Dharma position, 104
  exerting/upholding one's own, 70, 125
  of the Lotus Land, 71–72
Dharma transmission, 68, 115
  heritage document, 83
"The Diamond Scalpel" (Zhanran), 47
Did Dōgen Go to China? (Heine), 125–126
dignity as the Dharma, 19
Dillard, Annie: clay soldiers emerging from the ground story, v–vi
"Direct pointing to the Mind, not depending on words or letters," 17–18*q*
direct teaching: vs. study, 68
disciples of the Buddha: all buddhas as, 83, 115. *See also* assembly of the Buddha
discourse styles. *See* Mahāyāna rhetoric; nonexplicit discourse; proclamation of the Dharma; self-referential discourse; wordplay
"divine sage" epithet, 62*q*, 137*n*82
Dōgen (Eihei Dōgen), 3–4
  on ancestor veneration, 111
  on attaining buddhahood in this very body and mind, 81
  biography of, 94, 144*n*95
  on buddha nature, 9, 30

Dōgen (*continued*)
celebration of particulars (phenomena), 30, 32–33, 36
challenges to monks, 30, 36, 87, 89
criticism of Dahui and Linji, 14
criticism of enlightenment teachings, 46, 48
dream parables, 36–40
and dreams and visions, 32–34
on earth (and space), 4, 72, 101, 103–106
ethics teaching over his career, 125–126; implications of, 124–125
facing the Buddha's parinirvāṇa, 87–89
on impermanence, 107
kōan collection, 103
kōan mastery, 49
last few days, 94
on the *Lotus Sutra*, 53, 67*(2)*, 93–94
Lotus Sutra references, 67–68
Lotus Sutra story citations, 67, 93
Lotus Sutra story interpretations, 67–94
Lotus Sutra story's importance for, 92–94
Lotus Sutra use (*see* Dōgen: use of the *Lotus Sutra*)
Mahāyāna context for Dōgen's views of earth, space, and time (*see* Mahāyāna imagery)
on Maitreya, 110*q*
on *mappō* theory, 106, 136*n*67
move to Echizen Province, 93, 99
Nirvāṇa Day discourses, 87–89
nondualism, 9, 24, 27
parables, 33, 34–40
parodies of Mahāyāna rhetoric, 35–36, 37–38, 38–39
practice instructions, 91, 92
proclamation of the Dharma, 19, 24–27, 30
as a proto-ecologist, 122*q*
as a religious thinker, 96*q*
on scholars, 78
self-referential discourse, 24, 25–26, 59
on space, 4, 10–11, 72–74, 74–79, 101, 103–106, 107
teachings for monks, 34–35
on time, 4, 82–83, 84, 107, 108, 112–114, 114–116
use of metaphor, 20–21
use of the fantastic, 31–34, 34–35
use of the *Lotus Sutra*, 4, 15, 19–20, 24–27, 33–34, 38, 48, 49, 63, 93–94
use of wordplay, 30, 32–33, 35, 70
works, 98, 103 (*see also Eihei Kōroku*; *Shōbōgenzō*)
worldview (*see* Dōgen's worldview)
yearning for the Buddha, 87, 88, 89
on zazen, 10, 71, 91, 92, 101
Dōgen's worldview, 4, 8, 10–11, 96
and ecology, 121–123
implications of, 117–127
as prescriptive, 125
and social ethics, 123–126
sources, 8–10, 102 (*see also* Mahāyāna imagery)
and string theory, 118–121
Dōji spirit, 98
Dolce, Lucia
on Nichiren and the *Lotus Sutra*, 55, 58*q*
on the Śākyamuni of the far distant past, 48*q*
Dongshan Liangjie
Five Ranks philosophy (theories), 9, 16
and Yunyan, 9
"don't waste time" caution, 111–112
doubts: as time, 113
Dream Diary (Myōe), 33, 51, 135*n*38
dream parables, 36–40
dreams
the Buddha's life story as a dream, 34
Dōgen and, 32–34
expressing the dream within a dream, 32–33, 37
Keizan's dreams and visions, 33
Myōe's dreams and visions, 31, 33, 51–52, 135*n*38
See also dream state (dreaming)
dream state (dreaming)
and awakening as one suchness, 34

as the locus/arena of awakening, 33, 34
See also dreams
dried turd parable, 37–38
dried turd/shitstick kōan (Yunmen), 37, 132*n*28
Dylan, Bob, 82*q*, 125*q*

earth (ground/land)
as an agent of awakening, 4, 104 (*see also* ground of awakening)
bodhisattvas emerging from (*see* bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story)
Buddha Ground, 44
buddha land, 71, 103–104
buddha nature of/as in, vii, 47
clay soldiers emerging from the ground story, v–vii
Daosheng's view of, 42–43, 65
Dōgen on, 4, 72, 101
East Asian views of, 65
flowers in space and, 79
Lotus Land, 65, 71–72
mud images, 104
native peoples emerging from the ground story, 129*n*1
open space under (*see* open space [empty space] under the ground)
as space and space as, 72, 73, 105
springing out of (*see* springing out of the earth)
Zhanran's view of, 46, 65
See also world (environment)
earth goddess, 97–98
earth spirits, 97–99
earth-witness mudrā, 97, 98
Earth Womb Bodhisattva (Jizō/Kṣitigarbha), 99–101
Echizen Province: Dōgen's move to, 93, 99
ecology: Dōgen's worldview and, 121–123
effect/result section (*Lotus Sutra*), 6, 7, 44
effort: exerting/upholding one's own Dharma position, 70, 125. *See also* responsibility
Eihei Dōgen. *See* Dōgen
Eiheiji, 3
vs. Tassajara, 138*n*96
Eihei Kōroku (Dōgen), 34–35, 98
audience addressed by the author, 34
on the Buddha land, 71
Nirvāṇa Day discourses, 87–89
nonexplicit Dharma proclaimed in, 24–27, 30
parables from, 35–40
on space, 10–11
See also specific topics addressed
Eihei Shingi (Dōgen), 98
Ekayāna (One Vehicle): skillful means as of, 15, 28
Eliot, T. S.: vision of time, 127
emerging bodhisattvas. *See* underground bodhisattvas
emerging bodhisattvas story. *See* bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story
emptiness
and form, 75
leap out of, 81
in the *Lotus Sutra*, 76
space as, 43, 74–75
of the stages of practice, 80
study of, 75–76
suchness vs., 16
empty sky: striking, 38*q*, 39
empty space. *See* open space (empty space) under the ground
Empty Vision: Metaphor and Visionary Image in Mahāyāna Buddhism (McMahon), 31
enactment practice, 9, 17–19
encouragements for practice, 89–92
enduring Buddha. *See* original Buddha
enduring presence of the Buddha, 83–87
engaging particulars, 70–71
engaging the way. *See* "Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way"
engaging the world, 125
engaging time, 108
enlightenment. *See* awakening
environment. *See* world

environmental ethics, 124*q*
  Leopold's view of nature underlying, 121*q*
environmental studies. *See* ecology
ephemerality. *See* impermanence
epithets for a buddha, 35
Esoteric Buddhism, 9. *See also* Shingon school; Tendai school; Tiantai school
eternal Buddha. *See* original Buddha
ethical responsibility. *See* responsibility
ethics, 123–126
  environmental ethics, 121*q*, 124*q*
  issues in Zen Buddhism, 124
  wisdom and, 123–124
everyday activities: and practice, 85
evil age. *See mappō* (evil age) theory
Existential and Ontological Dimensions of Time in Heidegger and Dōgen (Heine), 114
expounding of the Dharma
  by all things/beings, 92*q*, 124–125
  by the Buddha, 27*q*, 62
  See also proclamation of the Dharma
expounding of the *Lotus Sutra*, 27, 86

faith
  in devotional traditions, 7
  Lotus Sutra on, 53, 58–59
  for Pure Land schools, 53
"family style" of all buddhas, 126
the fantastic
  Dōgen's use of, 31–34, 34–35
  in East Asian Buddhist experience, 31*q*
father: the Buddha as, 88*q*
"the father is young and the son is old," 70, 82–83, 115
Faure, Bernard
  on dreams and visions, 37*q*
  Visions of Power, 33
Fazang, 9, 46
Five Ranks philosophy (theories), 9, 16
flames: as the practice place of buddhas, 86
flower of the Dharma. *See* Dharma flower
Flower Ornament Sutra. *See Avataṃsaka Sūtra*
flowers in space
  as the buddhas' teachings, 76–79
  as obstructions, 77
"Flowers of Space" (Dōgen), 76–77, 105
flowing of time/time-being, 120, 147*n*80
form
  of all buddhas, 83
  and emptiness, 75
  space as, 73
fostering awakening and compassion, 125, 126
Fourfold Dharmadhātu, 9, 16, 17
Four Quartet's (Eliot): vision of time, 127
freedom from obstructions, 86. *See also* awakening
fruit of practice section (*Lotus Sutra*), 6, 7
Fugen Bodhisattva, 57
"fundamental teaching," 6
Futagoyama volcano, 98–99
Fuxing Fatai: on space, 11

Gaṇḍavyūha Sūtra, 31
"Genjōkōan" (Dōgen), 33
"The Genuine Form of All Things" (Dōgen), 139*n*6
Gikai (Tettsū Gikai)
  and Dōgen, 72, 104
  as a Kokuzō devotee, 100
"giving up holding back your life," 85
"Going beyond Buddha" (Dōgen), 103
good physician parable, 6, 15
Grapard, Allan: on the *Lotus Sutra* mountain, 98–99
grasping space story, 73
Greene, Brian
  on space and time, 118*q*, 119*q*
  on time flowing, 120*q*
Gregory, Peter: on Tathāgata garbha, 101*q*
Groner, Paul, 7
ground. *See* earth (ground/land)
ground of awakening, 16, 17, 65
"ground of being" metaphor, 132*n*18
guidance of the sky/space, 86–87
gyō, 83–84

Hachiman deity, 52
Hakuin Ekaku
  on the *Lotus Sutra*, 60
  Lotus Sutra awakening, 59–60
  view of the world, 60, 65
Hakusan deity, 98, 99
"Harmony of Difference and Sameness" (Shitou), 63
Healing Buddha attendants, 100
Heart Sutra: on form and emptiness, 75
Hegel, Georg Wilhelm Friedrich: on Christ, 22
Heine, Steven
  on being-time, 113*q*, 114*q*
  on denying time, 107*q*
  on Dōgen's career, 125–126
Hekigan Roku, 63
heritage document in Dharma transmission, 83
hermeneutical circle, 20
hermeneutics (interpretation of texts), 13
  active interpretation, 20–21
  reciprocity between self-understanding and, 20
  See also Buddhist hermeneutics
hierarchical interpretations of skillful means: nondualism vs., 15, 27–29, 62
historical Buddha: original Buddha vs., 6, 44–46
hōben. *See* skillful means
Hōchi-bō Shōshin, 56
"holding back your life," "giving up," 85
"Home-leaving" (Dōgen), 93
Hōnen: Myōe's criticism of, 51
hongaku shisō. *See* original enlightenment teaching/theory
Hongzhi Zhengjue
  mind ground metaphor, 132*n*18
  practice instructions, 103*q*
  on transcending time, 112*q*
honji-suijaku, 52
Huayan (Kegon) teachings, 9, 15, 16, 29, 46
  Fourfold Dharmadhātu, 9, 16, 17
  ten times, 107–109
Huineng (Dajian Huineng)
  on the *Lotus Sutra*, 68, 87
  and Nanyue Huairang, 84–85

icchantika theory, 42
īgi, 83–84
Ikeda, Rosan, 47–48
images: as expressions of ultimate reality, 18. *See also* Mahāyāna imagery; *and specific images*
immediate realization. *See* rapid awakening
impermanence (transience)
  in the Nikāyas (*suttas*), 106
  of particulars (phenomena), 36
  spatialization of time as an aesthetic of, 106–107
inexplicit Dharma. *See* nonexplicit discourse
instructions. *See* practice instructions
interconnectedness
  and space, 105, 119
  of the ten times, 108
interdependent co-arising/origination, 9, 109
interpretation of texts. *See* hermeneutics
intersubjective awareness, 64
Ippen: and the *Lotus Sutra*, 53
"I was so much older then; I'm younger than that now" (Dylan), 82

Japanese Vajrayāna. *See* Shingon school; Tendai school
Jizō Bodhisattva, 99–101
jōdō. *See* Dharma hall discourses
Jōdō-shū Pure Land school founder, 51

Kagamishima, Genryū, 47–48
  on all things as sutras, 92*q*
  on release from the deluded mind, 69*q*
kalpas: images, 110–111
"Kanshiketsu" kōan (Yunmen), 37, 132*n*28
Kanzeon. *See* Avalokiteśvara Bodhisattva
The Karma of Words (LaFleur), 27–28

karmic obstructions. *See* obstructions, karmic
Kasuga deity: Myōe's vision of, 51–52
Kasulis, Thomas: on Kūkai, 18
Kegon teachings. *See* Huayan (Kegon) teachings
Keizan Jōkin, 72
  and dreams and visions, 33
  as a Kokuzō devotee, 100
Kenzei, 144*n*95
Kenzeiki, 94, 144*n*95
killing and giving life to space, 73–74, 105
Kim, Hee-Jin
  on Dharma position, 70*q*
  on Dōgen, 96*q*
knowing
  and not knowing, 102*q*
  space and, 102
  ten ways of knowing the three worlds, 108
kōans, 13, 17
  Dōgen's early collection, 103
  Dōgen's mastery of, 49
  "Kanshiketsu" (Yunmen), 37, 132*n*28
  "Ordinary Mind Is the Way" (Nanquan), 102–103
  sesame cakes kōans (Yunmen), 39
Kokuzō Bodhisattva, 100–101
Kōryūji, 100
Kṣitigarbha Bodhisattva, 99–101
kū: as space and emptiness, 76–77, 79–80
Kūkai, 100
  and the *Lotus Sutra*, 81
  on teachings and language, 18
Kumārajīva: Daosheng and, 41

ladle images, 36, 133–134*n*51
  Broken Wooden Ladle Buddha, 35, 36
LaFleur, William
  on self-referential discourse in the *Lotus Sutra*, 27–29
  on *yūgen*, 49
Lamotte, Étienne: on buddha fields, 71*q*
land: Lotus Land, 65, 71–72. *See also* earth
Landscape of the cosmos, 120
"Landscape Sutra." *See* "Mountains and Waters Sutra"
leap of faith, 7
  beyond the stages of practice, 80
  mappō theory and, 58–59
  out of emptiness, 81
leap philosophy: shift from progress philosophy to, 7, 80–81
Leopold, Aldo: field concept of nature, 121
liberation. *See* awakening
life span of the Buddha, 4, 5–6, 8, 64
  as being-time, 82, 84, 115
  the Buddha on, 84*q*
  as an encouragement for practice, 90–91
  and original enlightenment, 44–45
  and temporal reality, 43–44
life story of the Buddha: as skillful means, 5–6, 34, 61–62
Linji Yixuan, 39, 59
  Dōgen's criticisms of, 14
listening to and accepting the *Lotus Sutra*, 86
long life span. *See* life span of the Buddha
long-lived Buddha. *See* original Buddha
Lopez, Donald
  on "bodhisattva," vi
  Buddhist Hermeneutics, 13
lotus: as a symbol, 104. *See also* Dharma flower
Lotus Land, 65
  Dharma position, 71–72
Lotus Sutra
  affirmation of the reality of phenomena in, 29
  as the body of the Buddha, 89
  the Buddha of (*see* original Buddha)
  the Buddha's call for protectors of, 4–5, 42
  in Buddhist history, 81
  Chan masters dedicated to, 48–49
  chanting of the name of, 54, 58, 65
  chants from, 65, 138*n*96
  Daosheng's commentary on, 42–44
  dating of, 129*n*2

the Dharmakāya as seen in, 44–45, 56, 63–64, 65
Dōgen on, 53, 67*(2)*, 93–94
Dōgen's references to, 67–68
Dōgen's use of, 4, 15, 19–20, 24–27, 33–34, 38, 48, 49, 63, 93–94
as an embodiment of awakening/practice, 29, 91
emerging bodhisattvas story (*see* bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story)
emptiness in, 76
essential point, 87
expounding of, 27, 86
on faith, 53, 58–59
Hakuin on, 60
Hakuin's awakening while reading, 59–60
hermeneutic required by, 64
Huineng on, 68, 87
images in, 96–97
Ippen and, 53
Japanese name, 77
Kūkai and, 81
leap of faith in, 58–59, 80, 81
listening to and accepting, 86
mountain manifestation, 98–99
Myōe and, 51, 52
Nichiren and, 54, 59, 81
Nichiren Buddhism and, 18–19, 24, 29, 54
Nichiren on, 54–59
Niutou Fayong and, 48
nondualism, 27–28
parables in, 6, 15, 27, 32
as a preface to a missing scripture, 23
Pure Land schools and, 52–53
Ryōkan as inspired by, 60–61, 61–62, 137–138*n*83
Saichō and, 46*(2)*, 47, 56, 81
Saigyō as inspired by, 49–50
the Sambhogakāya in, 63–64, 65
sections, 6–7, 44, 77
self-referential discourse, 23–24, 27–30, 59, 74
story in (*see* bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story)
suchness as presented in, 29
Suzuki's lectures on, 63–65
Tibetan monk and, 80–81
upāya (skillful means/modes) in, 15, 27–29
veneration of, 29, 54
visual imagery in, 31, 32
Zhanran's use of, 46–48
"Lotus Sutra Hermitage" story, 94, 144*n*95
Lotus Sutra story. *See* bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story

Macy, Joanna: on reinhabiting time, 123
Mahākāla maṇḍala, 106
Mahāparinirvāṇa Sūtra: on buddha nature, 9, 30, 42, 47
Mahāyāna Buddhism: goal, 15
Mahāyāna imagery, 95–103
ancestors (lineage), 111
earth spirits, 97–99
earth-witness mudrā, 97, 98
Earth Womb Bodhisattva (Jizō/Kṣitigarbha), 99–101
kalpas, 110–111
long-range perspectives, 111–112
Lotus Sutra images, 96–97
Maitreya figure, 109–110
purpose (function), 96
Space Womb Bodhisattva (Kokuzō/Ākāśagarbha), 100–101
spaciousness in, 101–103
spatialization of time, 106–107
ten times, 107–109
See also visions of space and time in the emerging bodhisattvas story
Mahāyāna practices: visions of space and time in the emerging bodhisattvas story and the origin of, 4, 6–7, 7–8
Mahāyāna rhetoric: Dōgen's parodies of, 35–36, 37–38, 38–39
Mahāyāna sutras, 13
Daśabhūmika Sūtra, 80
Gaṇḍavyūha Sūtra, 31

Mahāyāna sutras (*continued*)
Heart Sutra, 75
Mahāparinirvāṇa Sūtra, 9, 30, 42, 47
Meditation Sutra, 53
Platform Sutra, 68
rejection of by Chan masters, 49, 59
Śrimāla Sūtra, 16
Śūrangama Sūtra, 10–11, 77*q*, 130–131*n*18
See also Avataṃsaka Sūtra; *Lotus Sutra*
Maitreya Bodhisattva, 85, 109–110
and Śākyamuni, 5, 85–86
and the underground bodhisattvas, 57
Mana Shōbōgenzō (Dōgen), 103
manifestation of the sacred
absolute manifestation, 22
aspects, 21
in the emerging bodhisattvas story, 22–23
Lotus Sutra mountain, 98–99
proclamation vs., 21–22
"true nature manifestations," 52
Mañjuśri Bodhisattva, 57
mappō (evil age) theory, 4–5
Dōgen on, 106, 136*n*67
and the leap of faith, 58–59
Saigyō on, 50
McMahon, David
on spaciousness in Mahāyāna imagery, 101–103
on visual imagery in Mahāyāna Buddhism, 31*q*
mealtime liturgy: Dōgen's addition to, 93
meditation: on space, 103. *See also* zazen
Meditation Sutra, 53
"Meeting Buddha" (Dōgen), 90–91
meeting the Buddha: desire for, 90–91
metaphor
Dōgen's use of, 20
Ricoeur on, 19–21, 79, 81
mikkyō teachings, 9
mind
direct pointing to, 17–18*q*
as Vulture Peak, 91
See also reality
"mind ground" metaphor, 132*n*18
mind of faith, 7
modes: upāya as, 28*(2)*
Mongaku: and Saigyō, 49
monks
Dōgen's challenges to, 30, 36, 87, 89
Dōgen's teachings for, 34–35
"the moon over Vulture Peak," 50
mortality as a spur to practice, 43
"Mountains and Waters Sutra" (Dōgen), 122–123
mud images, 104
mudra: buddha mudra, 10
multidimensionality
of space, 120
of time, 64, 109, 112–113, 120
of the universe, 118–119
Mumonkan
"Kanshiketsu" kōan (Yunmen), 37, 132*n*28
"Ordinary Mind Is the Way" kōan (Nanquan), 102–103
mutual nonobstruction/interpenetration/interactivity, 9, 16
Myōe Shōnin, 50–51
criticism of Hōnen, 51
dreams and visions, 31, 33, 51–52, 135*n*38
and the *Lotus Sutra*, 51, 52
master (*see* Mongaku)
yearning for the Buddha, 51–52, 65, 87, 88, 89
"Mystic Island" image, 62*q*, 137*n*82

Naess, Arne: on ecology, 121–122*q*
Naga princess: rapid awakening, 7–8
"Namu Myō-hō-ren-ge-kyō": chanting of, 58, 65
Nanquan Puyuan
on Maitreya, 110*q*
and Zhaozhou, 102–103
Nanyue Huairang: and Huineng, 84–85
native peoples emerging from the ground story, 129*n*1
Nattier, Jan: on leap philosophy, 7, 80–81
naturalist heresy, 14
nenbutsu practice, 51, 53*(2)*

Never-Despising Anyone Bodhisattva, 61
Nichiren
  claim to have been Bodhisattva Superior Conduct, 54
  and the *Lotus Sutra*, 54, 59, 81
  on the *Lotus Sutra*, 55–59
  on the *Lotus Sutra* Buddha, 54–55, 65
  on practice, 54, 65
  on responsibility for this world, 58
  on the underground bodhisattvas, 57
  view of the world, 58, 65
Nichiren Buddhism: and the *Lotus Sutra*, 18–19, 24, 29, 54
Nikāyas (*suttas*): impermanence in, 106
Nirvāṇa Day discourses (Dōgen), 87–89
Niutou Fayong: and the *Lotus Sutra*, 48
nondualism
  of Dōgen, 9, 24, 27
  vs. hierarchical interpretations of skillful means, 15, 27–29, 62
  of the *Lotus Sutra*, 27–28
  and temporality, 106–107
nonduality, 79, 81
  assertion of (*see* nondualism)
nonexplicit discourse (of Dōgen), 24–27
  as skillful means, 30
nonsentient things: buddha nature, 8–9, 9
nonseparability of space, 119
nose-grasping story, 73
not waiting for awakening, 84, 86

obstructions, karmic, 17
  buddhas as free from, 86
  flowers in space as, 77
Odin, Steve
  on environmental ethics, 124*q*
  on Leopold's view of nature, 121*q*
One Vehicle (*Ekayāna*): skillful means and, 15, 28
ongoing practice of buddhas, 84, 89–90, 115–116
"Only Buddha and Buddha" (Dōgen), 68
ontological basis of reality, 16, 101
ontological status of (the life span of) the Buddha, 8, 55–56
open space (empty space) under the ground, 43, 74–75, 76, 135*n*20
  springing out of (*see* springing out of the earth)
"Open Your Eyes" (Nichiren), 54
"Ordinary Mind Is the Way" kōan (Nanquan), 102–103
original Buddha (of the *Lotus Sutra*)
  all buddhas as emanations of/identified with, 55, 88
  East Asian views of, 65
  as eternal, 44, 54–55, 55–56; or not eternal, 44–45, 56
  vs. the historical Buddha, 6, 44–46
  Nichiren's claimed connection to, 54
  as omnipresent, 56
  as universal, 96*q*
Original Enlightenment and the Transformation of Japanese Buddhism (Stone), 44–45*q*
original enlightenment teaching/theory, 44–45, 46, 56
  Dōgen's criticism of, 46, 48
"origin teaching," 6

panjiao system, 28, 44, 47
parables
  burning house, 15
  of Dōgen, 33, 34–40
  dream parables, 36–40
  dried turd, 37–38
  good physician, 6, 15
  in the *Lotus Sutra*, 6, 15, 27, 32, 38
  phantom city, 32
  prodigal son, 38
  ragged beggar, 38
  sesame cakes, 38–40
  transformation bodies of buddhas, 35–36
parinirvāṇa of the Buddha, 52, 85, 86
  Dōgen facing, 87–89
  as skillful means, 4, 61–62
Parkes, Graham: on the ethical implications of Dōgen's teaching, 124–125

the particular: mutual nonobstruction/interpenetration/interactivity of the universal and, 9, 16
particulars (phenomena)
Dōgen's celebration of, 30, 32–33, 36
engaging, 70–71
ephemerality/transience, 36
as expressions of reality, 29, 30, 32–33, 40, 104, 124–125
as liberating, 34, 40
mutual nonobstruction/interpenetration/interactivity, 9, 16
space as the reality of the world of, 10–11, 72–73
See also beings; world (environment)
passages of time, 112–113
passing away of the Buddha. *See* parinirvāṇa of the Buddha
path: "shortening the path," 7
"Penetrating seven and accomplishing eight," 37*q*, 134*n*53
Penkower, Linda: on "vacated place," 135*n*20
performance: hermeneutics of, 19
phantom city parable, 32
phenomena. *See* particulars
physician parable, 6
place of practice of buddhas, 86, 103–104
Platform Sutra (Huineng), 68
poetry
Eliot's vision of time, 127
Ryōkan's references to the *Lotus Sutra*, 61–62, 137–138*n*83
Saigyō's references to the *Lotus Sutra*, 49–50
postures: as expressions of ultimate reality, 18
potential of all beings for awakening, 83, 106
in all times, 106
Potter, Karl, 7, 80
Prabhūtaratna Buddha: stūpa above Vulture Peak, 23, 74, 105–106
practice: process of awakening, 45, 84, 115
practice (Buddhist practice)
bodhisattva practice, 6–7, 54; methods, 124
enactment practice, 9, 17–19
encouragements for, 89–92
and everyday activities, 85
ground of awakening for, 16, 17, 65
importance, 48, 65
instructions (*see* practice instructions)
leap beyond the stages of, 80
Lotus Sutra as an embodiment of, 91
Lotus Sutra name-chanting practice, 54, 58, 65
Lotus Sutra veneration practice, 29, 54
Mahāyāna practice origin, 4, 6–7, 7–8
mortality as a spur to, 43
nenbutsu practice, 51, 53*(2)*
ongoing practice of buddhas, 84, 89–90, 115–116
as physical as much as mental, 18
purpose, 91, 92
rapid awakening practice, 7, 8
as realization/enlightenment, 62, 84–85, 91, 114
responsibility to practice, 65, 113, 114
stages, 80
ten practice, 69
zazen, 10, 71, 91, 92, 101
See also skillful means
practice instructions
from Dōgen, 91, 92
from Hongzhi, 103*q*
from Shitou, 111–112
practice place of buddhas, 86, 103–104
practice-realization, 84–85
potentiality in all times, 106
practice section (*Lotus Sutra*), 6–7
practitioners
and the environment, 10, 123
responsibility to practice, 65, 113, 114
seeking a teacher, 92, 104
and space, 105
and time, 108
prajña. *See* wisdom
presence of the Buddha, 83–87
the present: as total, 109

primordial time. *See* being-time
process of awakening, 45, 84, 115
proclamation of the Dharma (by Dōgen), 19, 24–27, 30
proclamation of the sacred, 21–22
  in the emerging bodhisattvas story, 22–23
  See also proclamation of the Dharma
prodigal son parable, 38
progress-philosophy-to-leap-philosophy shift, 7, 80–81
Pure Land: the world as, 54–55, 94
Pure Land schools
  Jōdō-shū founder, 51
  and the *Lotus Sutra*, 52–53
"Pure Standards for the Temple Administrators" (Dōgen), 98
purpose of practice, 91, 92

Qin emperor's tomb: clay soldiers emerging from the ground story, v–vi
quantum mechanics: Thuan on, 119*q*

ragged beggar parable, 38
Rambelli, Fabio: on the ritual use of texts, 19
rapid awakening: of the Naga princess, 7–8
rapid awakening practice, 7, 8
readiness of the underground bodhisattvas, 80
reading
  creative reading, 20, 34 (*see also* wordplay)
reality
  negation of the exaltation of the absolute, 32
  of nonduality, 79
  ontological basis, 16, 101
  particulars (phenomena) as expressions of, 29, 30, 32–33, 40, 104, 124–125
  seeing, 44*q*
  space as the reality of the world of particulars, 10–11, 72–73
  of time (temporal reality), 43–44, 113
  words, postures, and images as expressions of, 18
  See also suchness; truth
realization. *See* awakening
recompense body of the Buddha, 45–46
Record of Ippen, 53
Reeves, Gene
  on the emerging bodhisattvas story, 101*q*
  on the enduring Buddha, 96*q*
  on open space under the ground, 76
reinhabiting time, 123
release from delusion, 69*q*
responsibility
  to exert/uphold one's own Dharma position, 70, 125
  to practice, 65, 113, 114
  for this world, 58, 124–126
result/effect section (*Lotus Sutra*), 6, 7, 44
Ricoeur, Paul
  on the manifestation and proclamation of the sacred, 21–22, 22–23
  on metaphor, 19–21, 79, 81
ritual use of texts, 18–19
Rujing. *See* Tiantong Rujing
Ryōbu Shintō, 19
Ryōkan, 60, 61, 65
  as inspired by the *Lotus Sutra*, 60–61, 61–62, 137–138*n*83
Ryūten spirit, 98

the sacred. *See* manifestation of the sacred; proclamation of the sacred
Sadāparibhūta Bodhisattva, 61
Saddharmapundarīka Sūtra. *See Lotus Sutra*
Saichō
  and the *Lotus Sutra*, 46, 47, 81
  and the *Lotus Sutra* Buddha, 46, 56
  on suchness, 29
Saigyō, 49, 65*(2)*
  poetry inspired by the *Lotus Sutra*, 49–50
Śākyamuni. *See* Buddha
Samantabhadra Bodhisattva, 57

Sambhogakāya Buddha: in the *Lotus Sutra*, 63–64, 65
Sandōkai (Shitou), 63
Sanlun school: Chizang, 8
scholars: Dōgen on, 78
seated meditation practice. *See* zazen
Seattle, Chief, 129*n*11
seeing reality, 44*q*
seeing the triple world, 77, 141*n*39
seeking a teacher, 92, 104
"Self-Fulfillment Samādhi" (Dōgen), 10, 72–73
self-referential discourse
  of Dōgen, 24, 25–26, 59
  in the *Lotus Sutra*, 23–24, 27–30, 59, 74
self-reflexive allegory. *See* self-referential discourse
self-understanding: reciprocity between hermeneutics and, 20. *See also* awakening
sentient beings: all as buddha nature, 30. *See also* beings
sermons. *See* Dharma hall discourses
sesame cakes kōans (Yunmen), 39
sesame cakes parable, 38–40
Sharf, Robert: on Zhanran, 46
Shigong Huizang: and Zhizang, 73
Shingon school, 9, 19
  founder, 18
Shinran, 7
Shintō: Ryōbu Shintō, 19
shishō, 83
Shitou Xiqian
  "Harmony of Difference and Sameness," 63, 111–112*q*
  practice instructions, 111–112
  "Song of the Grass Hut," 112*q*
Shōbōgenzō (Dōgen), 98
  "Actualizing the Fundamental Point," 33
  audience addressed by the author, 34
  "Awakening to the Bodhi-Mind," 90, 126
  "The Awesome Presence [or Dignified Manner] of Active Buddhas," 83–84, 104, 106
  "Being Time," 82, 108, 112–114
  "The Bodhisattva's Four Methods of Guidance," 124
  "Buddha Ancestors," 111
  "Buddha Nature," 9, 30
  "The Dharma Flower Turns the Dharma Flower," 68, 74*q*, 74–75*q*, 79–80, 81, 82, 101, 103, 104–105, 105–106, 114–115
  "Flowers of Space," 76–77, 105
  "The Genuine Form of All Things," 139*n*6
  "Going beyond Buddha," 103
  "Home-leaving," 93
  "Meeting Buddha," 90–91
  "Mountains and Waters Sutra," 122–123
  nonexplicit Dharma proclaimed in, 26
  "Only Buddha and Buddha," 68
  "Self-Fulfillment Samādhi," 10
  "Sounds of the Valley Streams; Colors of the Mountains," 92, 104
  "Space," 73, 105
  "Taking Refuge in the Three Treasures," 67
  "Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way," 10, 19, 71, 105; "Self-Fulfillment Samādhi," 10, 72–73
  "The Tathāgata's Whole Body," 89–90, 115–116
  "The Triple World Is Mind Only," 82–83, 124–125
  "Turning the Dharma Wheel," 10–11
  "Within a Dream Expressing the Dream," 32–33, 37
"shortening the path," 7
Shōyōroku: sesame cakes kōans (Yunmen), 39
sitting meditation practice. *See* zazen
skillful means (upāya/*hōben*), 14–15
  alternative terms for, 28
  of Avalokiteśvara, 39–40
  the Buddha's call for protectors of the *Lotus Sutra* as, 42
  the Buddha's life story as, 5–6, 34, 61–62

the Buddha's parinirvāṇa as, 4, 61–62
as modes, 28*(2)*
nondualistic (inclusive) vs. hierarchical interpretations of, 15, 27–29, 62
nonexplicit discourse as, 30
sky
guidance of the "spreading sky," 86–87, 106
striking the empty sky, 38*q*, 39
Snyder, Gary: on Dōgen and the "Mountains and Waters Sutra," 122–123
social ethics: Dōgen's worldview and, 123–126
sokushin jōbutsu, 81
sokushin zebutsu, 81, 91
"Song of the Grass Hut" (Shitou), 112*q*
"the son is old," "the father is young and," 70, 82–83, 115
soteriological function/activity of the Buddha, 8, 55
Sōtō school
early temples, 99
founders, 3–4, 33 (*see also* Dōgen)
Lotus Sutra verses chanted in, 65, 138*n*96
See also Caodong school; *and under* Zen masters
"Sounds of the Valley Streams; Colors of the Mountains" (Dōgen), 92, 104
space
Abhidharma teaching on, 102
active functioning, 119
as an agent of awakening, 4, 86–87, 106
buddha nature, 87
Dōgen on, 4, 10–11, 11, 72–74, 74–79, 101, 103–106, 107
earth as and as earth, 72, 73, 105
as enlightenment/liberation, 10, 101–102
enlightenment of, 72
enlightenment/realization as, 105–106
flowers in (*see* flowers in space)
as form, 73
grasping space story, 73
guidance of, 86–87, 106
and interconnectedness, 105, 119
killing and giving life to, 73–74, 105
and knowing, 102
Landscape of the cosmos, 120
meditation on, 103
multidimensionality, 120
Nanquan on, 102–103
nonseparability, 119
open (*see* open space [empty space] under the ground)
and practitioners, 105
as the reality of the world of particulars, 10–11, 72–73
springing out of, 70, 72, 104–105
time as represented in, 106–107
See also space and time
"Space" (Dōgen), 73, 105
space and time
Greene on, 118*q*, 119*q*
visions of (*see* visions of space and time in the emerging bodhisattvas story)
See also space; time
Space Womb Bodhisattva (Kokuzō/Ākāśagarbha), 100–101
spatialization of time, 106–107
"spreading sky": guidance of, 86–87, 106
springing out of space, 70, 72, 104–105
springing out of the Dharma flower, 70, 74, 80–81, 105
springing out of the earth, 70, 72, 80, 104–105
of teachers, 92, 104
of the underground bodhisattvas, 5, 80–81, 104
stages of practice: and the leap beyond, 80
Sthāvarā (earth goddess), 97–98
Stone, Jacqueline, 47–48
on the original enlightenment of the Buddha, 44–45*q*
stories
clay soldiers emerging from the ground story, v–vii
grasping space story, 73

stories (*continued*)
"Lotus Sutra Hermitage" story, 94, 144*n*95
native peoples emerging from the ground story, 129*n*1
See also bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story; kōans; life story of the Buddha; parables
striking the empty sky, 38*q*, 39
string theory: Dōgen's worldview and, 118–121
Strong, John: on Sthāvarā (earth goddess), 97–98
study
direct teaching vs., 68
of emptiness, 75–76
and realization, 69
stūpa above Vulture Peak, 23, 74, 105–106
suchness
attainment of, 71–72
awakening and dreaming as one suchness, 34
dynamic aspect, 29
vs. emptiness, 16
the Sambhogakāya as, 64
teaching of, 26
sudden enlightenment. *See* rapid awakening
śunyāta. *See* emptiness
Superior Conduct Bodhisattva: Nichiren's claim to have been, 54
Śūrangama Sūtra, 10–11, 77*q*
inauthenticity, 130–131*n*18, 141*n*37
Susskind, Leonard: on the Landscape of the cosmos, 120*q*
sutras
all things as, 92*q*
as buddha wombs/embryos, 17
diversity, 13
evaluation of, 15
historicity, 129*n*2, 130–131*n*18, 141*n*37
interpretation of (*see* Buddhist hermeneutics)
ritual use of texts, 18–19
turning the pages, 69
See also Mahāyāna sutras
suttas (Pali texts): impermanence in, 106
Suzuki, Shunryū, 62–63, 65
lectures on the *Lotus Sutra*, 63–65
on the Sambhogakāya, 63–64, 65

Takasaki, Jikidō, 69*q*
"Taking Refuge in the Three Treasures" (Dōgen), 67
"Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way" (Dōgen), 10, 19, 71, 105
"Self-Fulfillment Samādhi," 10, 72–73
talks. *See* Dharma hall discourses
Tanabe, George: on the fantastic in Buddhist experience, 31*q*
Tanabe, George, and Willa: on the *Lotus Sutra*, 23*q*
Tanahashi, Kazuaki: on "time-being," 147*n*80
The Tao of Physics (Capra), 118
Tassajara: vs. Eiheiji, 138*n*96
Tathāgata garbha (buddha womb/embryo), 15–17, 100–101
as an encouragement for practice, 90
"The Tathāgata's Whole Body" (Dōgen), 89–90, 115–116
tathāta. *See* suchness
teachers: springing out from the earth, 92, 104
teachings. *See* Buddhist teaching(s)
temples of the early Sōtō school, 99
temporality. *See* time
ten ages, 108
Tendai school, 4, 9
founder (*see* Saichō)
original enlightenment/original Buddha critics, 56
threefold body theory, 48, 56
See also Tiantai school
"Ten Degrees of Pervasive Teaching" (Zhiyi), 44
ten epithets for a buddha, 35
ten practice, 69
ten times, 107–109
ten ways of knowing the three worlds, 108

Tettsū Gikai. *See* Gikai
texts
  interpretation of (*see* hermeneutics)
  ritual use of, 18–19
things. *See* beings (things); particulars (phenomena)
three bodies of the Buddha theory, 45–46, 48, 56
three treasures, 67
three worlds. *See* triple world
Thurman, Robert: on Vajrayāna hermeneutics, 18
thusness. *See* suchness
Tiantai school, 46
  founder (*see* Zhiyi)
  panjiao system, 28, 44, 47
  See also Tendai school; Zhanran
Tiantai Zhiyi. *See* Zhiyi
Tiantong Rujing, 85
  on space, 11
Tibetan monk: and the *Lotus Sutra*, 80–81
time (temporality)
  as an agent of awakening, 4
  beings as, 113
  Daosheng's view of, 43–44
  denying, 107*q*
  Dōgen on, 4, 82–83, 84, 107, 108, 112–114, 114–116
  Eliot's vision of, 127
  engaging, 108, 111–112
  enlightenment and, 116
  flowing of time/time-being, 120, 147*n*80
  as inclusive of all times, 115
  long-range perspectives, 111–112
  multidimensionality, 64, 109, 112–113, 120
  Nichiren's view of, 55
  passages of, 112–113
  practitioners and, 108
  reality (temporal reality), 43–44, 113
  reinhabiting, 123
  spatialization of, 106–107
  ten times, 107–109
  total present, 109
  transcending, 112
  turning the Dharma flower through, 114–115
  unity of, 115
  See also being-time (time-being); space and time
time-being. *See* being-time
tomb of the Qin emperor: clay soldiers emerging from the ground story, v–vi
total present, 109
"trace teaching," 6
transcending time, 112
transformation bodies of buddhas parable, 35–36
transience. *See* impermanence
transmission. *See* Dharma transmission
Trinh Xuan Thuan: on quantum mechanics, 119*q*
triple world
  seeing, 77, 141*n*39
  ten ways of knowing, 108
"The Triple World Is Mind Only" (Dōgen), 82–83, 124–125
True Dharma Eye Treasury. *See* *Shōbōgenzō* (Dōgen)
"true nature manifestations," 52
truth: as communicated by teachings, 18. *See also* reality
Tucker, Mary Evelyn: *Buddhism and Ecology*, 121
turning the Dharma flower, 68–69, 74–75, 114–115
"Turning the Dharma Wheel" (Dōgen): on space, 10–11
turning the pages of a sutra, 69
Tuṣita Heaven
  buddhas/the Buddha in, 85–86
  Maitreya in, 110

ultimate reality. *See* reality
underground bodhisattvas (emerging bodhisattvas), 54, 97
  as an encouragement for practice, 91–92
  leaders, 5
  Nichiren on, 54, 57
  readiness, 80

underground bodhisattvas (*continued*)
reference to the presence of, 77
springing out of the earth, 5, 80–81, 104
story (*see* bodhisattvas emerging from the ground story)
Superior Conduct, 54
unity of time, 115
the universal: mutual nonobstruction/interpenetration/interactivity of the particular and, 9, 16
universe: multidimensionality, 118–119
Unno, Mark: on Myōe, 52
upāya. *See* skillful means

"vacant place" ("vacated place"), 47*q*
Penkower on, 135*n*20
See also open space (empty space) under the ground
Vajrayāna (Japanese). *See* Shingon school; Tendai school
Vajrayāna hermeneutics, 18
vast life span. *See* life span of the Buddha
vehicles
Ekayāna (One Vehicle), 15, 28
flowers-in-space vehicle, 76–79
See also Mahāyāna Buddhism
veneration of ancestors in Chan and Zen Buddhism, 111
veneration of the *Lotus Sutra*, 29, 54
visions
in East Asian Buddhist experience, 31–32*q*
Eliot's vision of time, 127
Keizan's dreams and visions, 33
Myōe's dreams and visions, 31, 33, 51–52, 135*n*38
See also Dōgen: on space; Dōgen: on time; visions of space and time in the emerging bodhisattvas story
Visions of Power (Faure), 33
visions of space and time in the emerging bodhisattvas story, 4, 7
and the origin of Mahāyāna practices, 4, 6–7, 7–8
See also life span of the Buddha; underground bodhisattvas
visiting bodhisattvas from a distant world system, 4–5
"Voices of Mountains, Trees, and Rivers" (Parkes), 124–125
Vulture Peak
the assembly on, 57–58, 85
the Buddha on, 67
the mind as, 91
"the moon over Vulture Peak," 50
stūpa above, 23, 74, 105–106

The Way
engaging (*see* "Talk on Wholehearted Engagement of the Way")
"Ordinary Mind Is the Way" (Nanquan), 102–103
Western appropriation of Zen Buddhism, 3
"What is Buddha?" 132*n*28
"What is the Way?" (Zhaozhou), 102–103
whole body: of the Tathāgata, 89
Williams, Duncan Ryūken: *Buddhism and Ecology*, 121
Williams, Paul: on wisdom, 124*q*
wisdom (*prajña*), 123, 124*q*
and ethics, 123–124
space as, 101–102
"Within a Dream Expressing the Dream" (Dōgen), 32–33, 37
womb of the Buddha. *See* Tathāgata garbha
wordplay: Dōgen's use of, 30, 32–33, 35, 70. *See also* creative reading
words
as expressions of ultimate reality, 18
The Karma of Words (LaFleur), 27–28
not depending on, 17–18*q*
See also wordplay
world (environment)
as the agent/arena/locus/functioning of awakening, 4, 10, 34, 40, 46, 57–58
cause of the appearance of buddhas in, 15, 28, 33, 67, 87

East Asian views of, 65
engaging, 125
environmental ethics, 121*q*, 124*q*
practitioners and the environment, 10, 123
as the Pure Land, 54–55, 94
responsibility for this world, 58, 124–126
See also particulars (phenomena); triple world
worldview of Dōgen. *See* Dōgen's worldview
worldview of Zen Buddhism, 3
Wuzu Fayan: on space, 11

Xitang Zhizang. *See* Zhizang
Xuefeng Yicun, 86*q*

yamabushi: Ippen, 53
yearning for the Buddha, 51–52, 65, 87, 88, 89
Yogācāra theory of beings without buddha nature, 42
Yuanwu Keqin: on space, 11
yūgen, 49, 107
Yunmen
"Kanshiketsu" kōan, 37, 132*n*28
sesame cakes kōans, 39
Yunyan Tansheng: and Dongshan, 9

zazen (seated meditation practice): Dōgen on, 10, 71, 91, 92, 101
Zen Buddhism
ancestor veneration, 111
ethics issues, 124
sermons (*see* Dharma hall discourses)
Western appropriation of, 3
worldview, 3
See also Chan Buddhism; kōans; practice; Sōtō school; Zen masters
Zen masters
Gikai, 72, 100, 104
Hakuin, 59–60, 65
Keizan, 33, 72, 100
Ryōkan, 60–62, 65, 137–138*n*83
Suzuki, 62–65
See also Chan masters; Dōgen
Zhanran, 8, 9, 29
on buddha nature, 8, 46–47
use of the *Lotus Sutra*, 46–48
view of the earth/world, 46, 65
Zhaozhou Congshen: and Nanquan, 102–103
Zhiyan: on the ten times, 109*q*
Zhiyi (Tiantai Zhiyi), 6, 44
on the *Lotus Sutra* Buddha, 44–46, 55, 56, 65
panjiao system, 28, 44, 47
Zhizang (Xitang Zhizang): Shigong Huizang and, 73